

## Read Night Ranger - Chapter 201: Dark Knights

Chapter 201: Dark Knights

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Marvin had just roused the warriors slumbering in the Eternal Night Kingdom.

Instead of seeking help from the old blacksmith, he tried to leave the Eternal Night Kingdom through his Eternal Night Imprint.

But it was the first time he used it after all, so there was a bit of a deviation when locating White River Valley.

He brought these warriors out and arrived in the dense forest between River Shore City and White River Valley.

Marvin could only bring them back in.

He didn't know how long the time spent in the Eternal Night Kingdom lasted in the outside world. It shouldn't have been too long.

But when he noticed it was noon, he felt something wrong.

There seemed to be a discrepancy with the flow of time. This made him hurry back to the castle.

But surprisingly he once again saw some luxurious carriages at the border of his territory.

They were remaining in place, and actually had an air of nobility.

And Marvin remembered something about that half new moon flag.

But when he looked around, a very fierce girl started shouting at him from inside.

This annoyed Marvin so he immediately answered back.

...

"This is your territory? You are that wandering Marvin?" The girl looked at Marvin with extreme surprise.

"You are in obviously in your territory. You actually deceived me in saying you were out!?"

Marvin was confused. "What are you talking about?"

At that time, a Knight quickly dismounted and hurried in front of Marvin.

He followed standard knight etiquette. "With respect to Lord Marvin, we came from Lavis Dukedom."

"I am the Head Knight, Oren. Please allow me to make introductions. This young lady in the carriage is the respected Lady Daniela, she is your cousin."

"At the same time, she is also your fiancée. We came representing the Lavis Kingdom's Royal Family. When we previously paid a visit to your castle, we were told that you weren't inside your territory, and thus we waited on the outskirts."

"It looks like you came back from River Shore City. We didn't know if it was something routine."

Oren's attitude was very friendly and very poised, like a genuine knight.

Daniela sitting on the carriage seemed a bit small-minded compared to him.

Marvin immediately frowned after listening, and rubbed his temples. "Hold on, what did you say?"

"Another fiancée? And a cousin?"

Before the Knight could answer, Daniela couldn't help but ask in a stern voice, "What do you mean 'another fiancée?'"

"Do you already have another woman?"

Marvin stayed silent. He felt he wouldn't be able to communicate with this rude woman.

He looked at Oren.

The latter was a bit troubled, asking, "Lord Marvin, do you need me to confirm our identities?"

Marvin finally noticed what he'd missed.

Now he remembered that the half new moon flag was the flag of Lavis Dukedom's royal family.

When the fake Bamboo came to his territory she didn't have any flag, and only said she was paying a private visit.

Marvin carefully checked this group.

Including Oren, these Knights looked well trained.

White River Valley's guards were definitely not their match.

If it was before, he would still have some apprehensions, but he didn't need to be so prudent now.

He thought for a bit and then said, "In that case, Ladies and Gentlemen, please go to my castle."

"I wasn't in the territory before. If there are matter to discuss, we can take our time."

Oren nodded, he hesitated before offering, "Do you want to borrow a horse..."

Marvin laughed, thanking him for his kindness. "There is no need for now."

After saying that, without caring about Daniela's meaningful glance, he sped up toward the castle.

His speed was frightening, he disappeared up the hill in an instant.

"Amazing ability," Oren immediately praised.

"What. It's just an ignorant child," Daniela said with disdain. "Let's go, Knight Oren."

"Yes, Young Miss."

The carriage slowly moved forward, and the group from Lavis Dukedom finally entered White River Valley.

...

Marvin quickly rushed through his territory on his own.

He intended to go to the castle first to ask Wayne and Anna what was going on.

But at that time, he noticed an incident in the northeast area of White River Valley!

Marvin looked at the large amount of adventurers gathering and the few guards in front of them.

'What happened? Why are the guards and adventurers fighting?'

Marvin's heart sank.

Something like that happening at this time was a bit beyond his expectations.

Logically speaking, ever since Constantine kept watch, the adventurers should have known their place.

'What's going on today?'

He had no time to think, because there were more than a hundred adventurers gathered!

The guards were heavily outnumbered. There was Gru in the middle, apparently trying to persuade the adventurers, but those rude and unreasonable guys couldn't listen to reason, and they pushed the guards as a provocation!

Marvin was angry, and immediately rushed over.

...

North of a few farmhouses was a wide field.

That field was filled with pumpkins, but those adventurers were actually wantonly destroying everything. A few startled inhabitants were looking at these boorish barbarians running wild in the pumpkin field, but they didn't dare to stop them.

They didn't stop until they were blocked by a group of guards.

"Stop! What are you doing!"

A strict voice echoed as Marvin immediately appeared at the scene.

He stared at this group of more than a hundred adventurers. They clearly had malicious intentions!

"I am White River Valley's Overlord, Marvin. What the hell are you doing!"

Facing this many adventurers, Marvin wasn't afraid. He looked straight at a few adventurers who were clearly leading this group and asked strictly.

When Gru saw Marvin, he said in a low voice, "Lord Marvin, I also just arrived. These people are new. They seemed to have deliberately come here to cause troubles... Want me to notify Sir Constantine?"

"No need."

Marvin waved his hand and took a step forward.

"I clearly explained in this wilderness clearing order."

"I won't be lenient if any adventurer dares to break my territory's laws."

"I'll give you one chance to explain."

He stood alone, but it felt as if he had an army behind him.

Those few adventurers glanced at each other as disdain flashed through their eyes.  
"You are Marvin?"

"We aren't doing anything. We only want to get some pumpkins, that's all."

"We aren't on your recruitment list, we came but we had nothing to eat. Naturally we had no other choice but to help ourselves."

After saying that, that group of adventurers immediately roared with laughter.

Marvin shook his head. "I already gave you a chance."

Then, killing intent flashed through his eyes.

"Dark Knights, leave no one behind."

Nineteen tall people suddenly appeared behind him!

Each of them was expressionless and held a greatsword. They suddenly charged toward those adventurers.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 202: Crimson Cross

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The carriage slowly moved up the hill.

A knight pulled on the reins and the first rate steed immediately stopped.

"Oren, what happened over there?"

Daniela who was bored to death was trying to see what happened to White River Valley's pumpkin fields from her open window.

The Head Knight Oren said with a serious expression, "Looks like an adventurer riot."

"On our way, we heard that Baron Marvin issued a wilderness clearing order and recruited many adventurers."

"But this kind of situation would usually attract too many adventurers, and they aren't the type of people to stay calm."

Daniela excitedly asked, "You mean, people are looking for trouble?"

Oren helplessly said, "It is indeed like that."

"Baron Marvin seemed to be short on manpower, the guards behind him are lacking. Even if he pretty skilled, he is alone."

"Young Miss, how about..."

Daniela coldly snorted, "He made me wait outside his territory for so long and there wasn't even a grand welcoming ceremony. I've yet to forgive him! You actually want to go help him?"

"You are family after all," Oren firmly said. "Could you have forgotten Cridland family precepts?"

Daniela's expression changed. "Oren, you are almost as annoying as my dad."

Oren laughed, reassuring, "I wouldn't dare, everything is for Young Miss to decide."

Daniela squinted, looking in the distance.

Marvin was only one man on that pumpkin field, apparently scolding the adventurers.

Those adventurers didn't retreat, and from their vantage point, they could see that some adventurers hidden behind others had already taken out their weapons.

"They want to harm Baron Marvin," Oren solemnly observed.

"Young Miss, please give the order and we will hurry over. There should still be enough time."

They were first grade Knights from the North. Oren was certain they could scatter that group of adventurers with a charge.

Daniela also realized that point.

She bit her lip and muttered in dissatisfaction, "Well, it would be annoying if he truly died to these adventurers."

"That would make me a widow."

"Oren, take ten men and charge. Scatter these adventurers."

Oren nodded and was about to pick the men.

He hadn't expected a frightening killing intent to be emitted from the pumpkin field!

"Clang!"

All the Knights couldn't help but draw their swords!

This was an instinctive reaction to danger that had been drilled into them!

"What's going on? Oren?"

Daniela was shocked.

Oren was startled. "These people... Who are they?"

The nineteen Dark Knights appeared out of nowhere.

They were each carrying a two handed greatsword. Their movements were identical as they charged toward the adventurers!

They had appeared in a split second. An indescribable pressure affected everyone in the surroundings.

Even the Knights on the hill were affected, causing their reaction.

But in reality, the power of these warriors wasn't targeting them.

The Dark Knights' pressure was targeting those reckless adventurers!

"Even the incidental killing intent is so heavy..." Oren dazedly looked at those Dark Knights who were like sharp blades piercing through the group of adventures, casually slaughtering them. He mumbled, "This kind of killing intent... How many people did they kill!"

As for Daniela, she was dumbstruck.

Marvin obviously only had nineteen people, but it looked like an army.

Each Dark Knight's body was carrying the remaining brave souls of their fellow soldiers who had died on the battlefield during those days.

Thus, every time they attacked, the enemy would have to face the pressure from the wills of countless souls.

This pressure might be a lot inferior to a Dragon's might, but it was enough to make ordinary people lose their ability to resist.

They couldn't stop.

They were natural killing machines!

...

Dark greatswords were slashing through that crowd, as the warriors were wantonly slaughtering the reckless adventurers.

Gru and the other guards froze.

The Mysterious Lord Marvin, who knew when he had hidden such an army away?

As for those adventurers, 80% of them lost control of their bodies right at the start!

[Brave Souls Pressure]: Enemies will undergo a high willpower test every three minutes. Failing that high willpower test would make them panic and lose control over their bodies.

This was the strength of the Dark Knights!

Marvin coldly looked at the scene.

The adventurers were howling in grief, begging for forgiveness, but the Dark Knights didn't care about this.

They could only slaughter.

They were born to slaughter!

Even if an adventurer knelt on the ground, discarding his weapon, they still wouldn't hesitate to slash down.

They were drenched in blood.

They didn't know what stopping meant.

Because the order Marvin gave them was – Leave no one behind! –

...



This was a completely one sided fight.

Nineteen people against a hundred. But the nineteen didn't suffer the slightest bit of damage while those hundred people were being slaughtered as they tried to make a run for it.

When the fight between both sides began, the battle was completely one sided!

This was because of the powerful [Brave Souls Pressure].

These nineteen people were clearly only 2nd rank Armored Fighters, but they had dexterity on par with Rangers, the Strength of high level fighters, and the nature of the grimmest murderers.

Their fighting style was very simple and cruel. It was to kill the enemy at all cost.

The adventurers fled in disorder.

Escape was their only choice.

Regardless of what kind of game they were playing before, under this absolute strength, they were already scared witless.

They also couldn't understand, from where did Marvin get this group of frightening killing machines!

But only Marvin knew that these seemingly 2nd rank warriors were once Legend powerhouses!

They followed the Night Monarch in helping humanity and other livings being to resist the monster powerhouses of the malicious wilderness.

They were a corps at first, personally founded by the Night Monarch.

They were born with a goal, and that was to kill!

Killing all kinds of monsters during the wilderness' Eternal Night.

At that time, there wasn't a clear division of planes. There would be frightening Celestial Beasts every few days on Feinan. Beholders and other monsters would also come by!

The Dark Knights were thus born in order to protect Feinan.

But their way of protecting was different. They chose the path of slaughter.

To kill every enemy to protect their own backs. This was the goal of the Dark Knights.

...

At first, the Dark Knights Corps had a total of ten thousand people.

During the endless battles in the Eternal Night, people kept dying.

Their bodies died but their brave souls were everlasting. That was the law created by the Night Monarch.

Whenever a Dark Knight died, his soul would be attached to his comrade, on his fellow soldier's body!

They would keep fighting alongside their comrade-in-arms.

Guarding Feinan together.

As the battles kept happening, the Dark Knights' numbers kept decreasing.

In the end, when the battles were over, only nineteen of them were left.

These nineteen carried the brave souls of ten thousand martyrs from ancient times.

Thus, they were invincible.

But when the battles ended, the Night Monarch left this world.

The Dark Knights whose sole purpose in existence was to slaughter would lose control over their abilities without the Night Monarch's control. They would turn into a group of slaughtering monsters!

In order to protect their own families, they sacrificed themselves.

They entered the Eternal Night Kingdom after the battles ended.

They froze themselves in the Sea of Darkness, slumbering for eternity.

They made a pledge. Only if this world faced a true frightening disaster and if the Night Monarch's heir came to the Sea of Darkness, would they rise up once again.

These remaining nineteen Dark Knights would follow the heir to battle!

They were born to protect Feinan, slumbered in order to save strength, and now, once again awoke with only one purpose.

That was to protect the continent they once protected.

For this purpose, they wouldn't hesitate to do anything.

Even if their power was restrained quite a bit due to the passage of time.

The former Legends were now merely at the 2nd rank.

But Marvin knew that with time, their power would once again return.

In at most five months, they would have recovered to Half-Legends.

As for whether they could return to being Legends once again, who knew.

He could order them through the Eternal Night Imprint.

With these Dark Knights, his territory had a real foundation!

They could freely travel from the Eternal Night Kingdom to and from Marvin.

Thus he could directly summon them from the void.

...

In a short eight minutes, a bit over a hundred adventurers were cleanly killed.

Rivers of blood flowed on the pumpkin field.

Those few farmer families were thoroughly terrified. Fortunately Marvin was protecting them, because ordinary people would definitely not be able to handle such cruel methods.

"You clean up the dead bodies," Marvin told the guards.

"Gru, go to the only road people can take from the Spider Crypt to White River Valley and set up a checkpoint."

"From now on, every adventurer wanting to enter White River Valley must go through a check."

"If there are troublemakers."

"Kill."

Marvin said this casually.

But it terrified Gru and the other listeners.

"Lord, isn't it too ruthless?" Gru cautiously asked.

Marvin pointed at the ground. "This is my territory."

"This is the place I want to protect. Whoever dares mess around will drop dead. It's that simple.

"Alright, these hundred or so adventurers, go borrow a few ox carts and gather those bodies at the side of the checkpoint."

"I want to make a [Crimson Cross]."

Marvin's tone was firm and resolute as he declared, "From now on, I don't want there to be any adventurers that dare to cause trouble in my White River Valley."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 203: Ice Empress

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Crimson Cross!

This was an ancient tradition from the North. Few southern nobles would use it because the Southern Wizard Alliance considered this method to be too bloody, ruthless, and uncivilized.

At least on the surface.

But Marvin knew that the current White River Valley was at the heart of the struggle.

If White River Valley was likened to a boat, then it was facing a huge storm.

Whether it would brave the wind or sink depended on this military campaign.

He knew that ever since the wilderness clearing order was released, a small place like White River Valley wasn't low key anymore.

Adding Marvin's previous display, his strength had already soared rapidly.

At least in East Coast, and even some other places in the South, Baron Marvin was already the hottest topic of the summer.

There were too many rumors about Marvin to count.

Having a high reputation didn't necessarily bring benefits though.

White River Valley's rise led to many people feeling pressured.

The only thing Marvin was pleased about was that White River Valley was located in a remote area. It wasn't like those inland territories and those territories bordering the South Wizard Alliance.

White River Valley only had Madeline's River Shore City in the surroundings, as well as Jewel Bay, which didn't belong to any noble.

That was the South Wizard Alliance's eastern headquarters, directly belonging to the council.

And the Three Ring Towers were different. Although these towers were part of the Alliance in name, in reality, the way they were divided was entirely different.

This was the advantage of remote areas.

At least they wouldn't be suppressed by surrounding powers during their development.

Despite this, the attention and pressure White River Valley received was exceptionally high.

This was a relatively backward territory after all. The inhabitants, guards, and even Marvin himself weren't prepared enough.

White River Valley itself couldn't bear this kind of pressure.

Fortunately, Marvin had many friends, and after experiencing all kinds of adventures, he had obtained support from all sides.

But it was other people's strength in the end. He had been feeling unsteady before obtaining the Dark Knights today.

There would inevitably be a time when others' strength would be unreliable.

Only your own strength is the most stable.

...

These people weren't careless when they read the clauses of the wilderness clearing order Marvin released.

But they still chose to do it.

This meant there were many people who had evil intentions toward Marvin and White River Valley.

These people were hired by enemies to disturb the order of White River Valley.

And Marvin couldn't allow any slip-up to happen during this military campaign.

Thus, he ruthlessly acted.

Desperate times called for desperate measures.

Even if he would come to have a ruthless reputation, Marvin didn't hesitate!

Thus, no matter what Gru said to persuade him, Marvin eventually set up the Crimson Cross!

One kilometer from the Spider Crypt, the adventurers who rushed over from Jewel Bay would first see this frightening and conspicuous cross!

The cross was five to six meters tall and those reckless adventurers' heads were hanging on top while headless bodies were piled up at the bottom.

A wooden tablet was erected on the side, with the cause of death of these adventurers written on it. – Not complying with the territory's laws, breaking into a pumpkin field to wreck havoc. –

Regardless of the country, this was a harsh punishment for this crime.

But for the current White River Valley, Marvin's method was the best way to strengthen his rule.

He made Gru assign two quick-witted guys to defend this place. They were in charge of registering and informing the adventurers who wanted to enter White River Valley.

Each adventurer would receive a number plate. The adventurers without plates would be expelled by the guards.

If there was any rebel, kill!

Obviously, the guards would be unable to handle this part.

The one who would was a Dark Knight standing behind them.

He was called [Eighteen].

He would defend this place and become the power protecting these guards' backs.

Indeed, the nineteen Dark Knights didn't have their own names.

Marvin simply gave them numbers. The leader was [Zero], continuing this way until [Eighteen].

The Dark Knights had no objection to this and this was convenient for Marvin to order them.

...

After the Crimson Cross was set up, it created a stir in the territory.

Adventurers who had yet to move from the river bank were scared witless. Many people began to secretly spread words of Marvin's brutality.

Even more people quietly packed their luggage and escaped White River Valley.

And the news soon spread to the temporary camp in the front line.

That group of adventurers didn't have much of a reaction.

After all those in the temporary camp were adventurers already directly recruited by Marvin, 2nd rank experts. Some were discharged from military and knew what must be done in times of war.

In addition, they also hoped there wouldn't be any infighting during the war.

They would be facing frightening Ogres after all!

That race had always been known for being fierce in battle.

Instead, Marvin's actions made them feel more relieved.

In any case, the war preparations were cleanly progressing under Marvin's orders.

Large amounts of adventurers simply moved to the temporary camps.

Some built their own camps while some joined a camp and helped build it. It was buzzing with activity.

The logistics groups were also crazily busy, constantly delivering water and food to the front line.

Under Anna's directions, everything was tightly regulated.

...

In the evening, inside the meeting room.

"I'm very sorry to make you two wait."

"I had to handle some matters."

Marvin sat on a chair and apologized to the refined Oren and to Daniela, who was still in a bad mood.

"It's all right," Oren hurriedly said.

Apparently this Head Knight's position was a bit higher than the Young Miss Daniela's in their group.

The two also sat down.

"You must have heard from Anna about what happened previously in the territory?"

Marvin looked at the two and went straight to the point. "That woman also claimed to be my fiancée."

Daniela snorted, "That was someone from the Twin Snakes Cult. They attacked us when we were heading to the South. At the same time, they appeared to have some ties to some territories' overlords. We had no other choice but to change our route."

"This made us arrive at White River Valley a lot later."

"Someone actually dared to pass herself as me. Wait till I see her, I'll kill her!"

Marvin was speechless.

Did his own cousin believe things were this easy?

He couldn't help but tap on the table with his finger. "Bamboo was very strong. Even if she wasn't a Legend, she still had the strength of a Half-Legend. And she had the Divine Power of the Azure Matriarch. An average person couldn't kill her."

"But she isn't a problem anymore, she already died."

He didn't expect Daniela to craftily smile. "Oh yeah?"

She put both hands together and a snowflake descended before turning into an ice mirror.

Surprisingly, there was a hot spring shown in the mirror.



There was a cave in the background.

"This is?" Marvin was shocked.

That Daniela woman could actually use magic? When he previously used Inspect, he couldn't perceive the existence of a battle class!

'Don't tell me she is much stronger than me?'

'No way, right?'

Marvin shivered and began to take another look at this cousin.

But his attention shifted back to that ice mirror. A well-shaped figure suddenly came out of the hot spring.

Her hair was hanging down on her face, and her hands spread out, exposing her fair body.

Marvin frowned after one glance. "Impossible!"

Suddenly, the woman raised her head, apparently realizing something!

"Bang!" The mirror shattered.

"Damn woman, pretending to be me and not allowing me to peep!" Daniela shamelessly said.

Marvin was left speechless.

But the shock in his heart had yet to disappear, because the woman in the mirror was really Bamboo!

'She didn't die?'

"Surprised?" Daniela sneered, "The Azure Matriarch's Chosen aren't that easy to kill."

"She is the same as her master. They can be reborn. You need to kill her at least three times to completely kill her!"

Three times?

Marvin's frown became even more pronounced.

Bamboo didn't die. This was an unprecedented news to him.

Even if Constantine was keeping watch in his territory, with Bamboo's abilities, she could cause terrible destruction.

Especially during this military campaign, who knew what she would do!

"You are worried about her?"

Daniela looked at Marvin, all smiles, "Dear Cousin, even if I really don't like you, I dislike that woman pretending to be me even more."

"As I just said, as long as she appears, I'll kill her!"

Oren nodded in agreement. "Since Young Miss said so, she would definitely keep her promise. Lord Marvin, even if our Young Miss is sometimes rude, willful and unreasonable, she has a strong point, which is that she keeps her promises."

"Knight Oren!" Daniela snapped angrily from the shame, "Who is rude, willful, and unreasonable?"

Oren seriously said, "Young Miss, Master told me before leaving that I must let Lord Marvin know everything about you."

"It would only work out if he is willing to marry you after knowing everything. Otherwise we can't force him to marry you. The Cridland clan doesn't force marriages."

Daniela flipped out! "Oren! I don't want to hear you speak for an hour!"

Oren had yet to speak again when Daniela opened her hand and a frightening cold was emitted from her palm. The pitiful Oren was immediately frozen into an ice sculpture!

Marvin saw this and was dumbstruck.

This kind of strength... she wasn't a Legend, right?

Daniela was apparently very satisfied with Marvin's expression, and arrogantly raised her head while looking at him. "Ice Shaping magic, not bad huh?"

"Wait a bit until I become a Legend. The Ice Shaping magic will transform into [Ice Angel Shaping], and when the time comes, I'll be able to change the entire continent into a winter climate!"

When Marvin heard Daniela's words, a famous name from his previous generation popped in his mind.

"Ice Empress?"

"Ice Empress?" Daniela apparently heard this name for the first time.

"I like this name. Hmm, I've decided, this will be my awe-inspiring name in the future!"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 204: Cridland

**Translator:** Translation Nation

**Editor:** Translation Nation

Marvin froze.

He didn't expect that by blurting out this name, Daniela would hear of her future name in advance.

At that time, he finally remembered why he kept having this familiar feeling when looking at Daniela.

He had thought it was because of bloodline resonance.

Many bloodlines would have this kind of resonance in Feinan after all. Marvin felt she was different when he first saw her.

But this actually had nothing to do with bloodline. It was because he knew her!

But Marvin knew "that" Daniela wasn't the current her but the Ice Empress from after the Great Calamity!

Even if Daniela was also extremely beautiful at that time, she was a bit different from how she was now.

After thinking back, Marvin guessed that it was most likely because when he saw the Ice Empress, it was Daniela in the Ice Angel Shape!

After reaching a certain level, Shapeshift Sorcerers could choose a shape that would replace their main human shape.

Daniela would most likely change it to be an Ice Angel, making her appearance somewhat different.

...

Thus, Marvin was now looking at Daniela in a different way.

Such a fierce powerhouse was actually his cousin?!

In Marvin's memory, the Lavis Dukedom in the North was one of the few countries that weren't destroyed by the Calamity.

Not only that, but Lavis' Queen, which was the young lady in front of him, still took advantage of the Calamity to keep expanding her territory.

She was the ruler of the North. Ultimately, she had a conflict with the Ice God and, in their anger, both were said to have fought for no less than a month!

And during this month, all of Feinan suffered from a winter freezing all living things.

Daniela wasn't merely boasting. The future her truly had the ability to change the entire Feinan's weather to a freezing winter!

This was the frightening strength of a Shapeshift Sorcerer, the Numen's strength!

In contrast, Marvin's two shapes, whether it was Beast-shape or Shadow-shape, were a lot inferior to Daniela's Ice Angel Shape.

This also had something to do with the purity of the bloodline.

Marvin's awakening was forcibly hastened by the Fortune Fairy. Otherwise it would have been almost impossible to awaken the thin and almost non-existent Numan bloodline in his body.

'It seems that this younger cousin and fiancée isn't a fake.'

'They must have sent people to investigate me because the news of me transforming into an Asuran Bear finally reached the North.'

'But then again... Even if I showed Shapeshift Sorcerer's abilities, why is Lavis Dukedom's family giving me so much importance?'

'Marrying the future Ice Empress to me?'

'There must be a reason behind this.'

Even if they gave him such a pleasant surprise, Marvin didn't let it get to his head.

There must be a bigger reason for them to look for his grandfather and end up coming to White River Valley.

Just as expected, they discussed for a while, and soon, Daniela talked about the main reason for this trip.

...

Ten minutes later, Daniela silently watched Marvin.

Marvin was thinking.

Daniela was quite straightforward.

Or at least, she seemed to be.

For this trip to White River Valley, she represented Lavis Dukedom for two things.

First was to get engaged with Marvin.

Second was to retrieve something.

The first stemmed from an ancient tradition of the Cridland clan.

The huge and mysterious Cridland clan had numerous branches and relatives, among which was Lavis' royal family which was one of the most outstanding.

Every descendant of this clan might be able to awaken their Numan bloodline to become a Shapeshift Sorcerer.

Of course, there wasn't a high probability.

In order to ensure the purity of the bloodline, the Cridland clan always had a strict rule stipulating that they had to intermarry. Also, in order for the later generations to be born with even stronger Shapeshift Sorcerers, there was an additional rule, which was to marry with the closest bloodline of the opposite sex.

But Daniela's branch in this generation only had women!

If she wanted to get married, she had to look for men from other branches. This was something intolerable to the royal family who attached great importance to the purity of their bloodline.

When they were troubled about this, Marvin's existence became known.

Marvin and Daniela had a common great-grandfather, so they were from the same branch.

Thus, according to the clan's rules, they were bound to get married.

But rules are dead while people are alive, and furthermore, not every Cridland descendant was willing to be bound by those damn rules.

Marvin's grandfather was a good example. He was extremely rebellious when he was young. In order to defy the rules, he left the North to head to the South.

But for the Lavis royal family, the most important thing was that he took away one of the most valuable treasures of the Cridland clan.

From Marvin's point of view, the main purpose of Daniela's trip to White River Valley was to retrieve the treasure for the Lavis Dukedom.

As for the engagement... Who knew whether she would directly run away from it after getting that treasure?

With Daniela's temper and extremely high strength, Marvin came to the conclusion that he couldn't handle her for the time being. Moreover, he didn't have much of an interest in this kind of random engagement.

...

"I'm very sorry, Miss Daniela," Marvin answered after pondering, "But I don't know anything about the treasure."

"My father was killed by the Twin Snakes Cult's people, and he didn't tell me anything about a treasure. As for my grandfather, I have even less memories of him."

"I'm afraid I cannot help you with this matter."

He had his own way of thinking.

This treasure was something his grandfather took out of the clan, so it was bound to be extremely valuable.

The Lavis royal family attached so much importance to it, and it was linked to the Great Devil. It involved too many things.

Marvin wouldn't give away the things his grandfather had set aside for his descendants.

"You can't?"

Daniela squinted, "Since that's the case, I have a request."

"Go ahead." Marvin was very courteous.

"Could I search your castle? Maybe that treasure is hidden somewhere."

"If you are willing to return this treasure, you'll obtain more wealth and resources from the Cridland clan that you could imagine."

Daniela was surprisingly very calm while negotiating, totally different from that rude girl earlier.

Marvin was silent for a moment.

"Impossible," said Marvin categorically.

"This is my castle, I won't let anyone randomly search for things."

"And as you can see, I am in the middle of war preparations. At least during that time, I won't allow it to happen."

Daniela frowned.

Marvin's unyielding attitude went beyond her expectations.

"Don't tell me you think your White River Valley can contend with the powerful Lavis Dukedom?" she lightly pressured.

A snowflake was already forming in Daniela's palm.

Marvin didn't say anything.

Because at that time, a handsome middle-aged man suddenly jumped in from a window.

He shook his brand new windbreaker and casually said, "Marvin, why do all your fiancées think of attacking you?"

The snowflake suddenly dissipated as Daniela showed an expression of disbelief!

Constantine casually took a seat in the meeting room, looked toward Daniela and commented, "However, they are all outstanding beauties."

Marvin faintly smiled, nodding to Constantine to express his thanks.

With this person keeping watch, Daniela who had yet to become a Legend didn't dare to be impudent!

He was a lot more confident while negotiating.

"Allow me to introduce this person. This is Sir Constantine."

Marvin shrugged, continuing, "White River Valley has no intention to go against the Lavis Dukedom. I am really busy at the moment, I have a war to prepare."

"Thus, allow me to take my leave for now. I'll make proper arrangements for your people, but please don't overstep your boundaries. Otherwise, you and I know that the outcome would be very awkward."

"Also, if you feel like you lack real combat practice due to your long distance travel, Sir Constantine might be willing to keep you company."

"You mean?"

He looked toward Constantine.

The latter casually took a wine cup in front of Marvin and took a sip before smiling at Daniela. "Of course, this would be my honor."

...

In the bedroom late in the night, Marvin had yet to fall asleep.

The negotiations during the day were simply the start of troubles. Even if Constantine could temporarily obstruct Daniela, Marvin knew that his younger cousin wouldn't be that easy to handle.

This meant Constantine had to remain in the castle.

This war was becoming more challenging since he lost a Legend.

But Marvin wasn't worried.

He still had another friend after all.

"Hu..."

'Thankfully there is still Ivan.'

The fighting strength the Elven War Saint could display on the battlefield would definitely not be weaker than Constantine's!

'Tomorrow I'll go to the temporary camp, and officially prepare for the war.'

'Anna and Wayne will still take care of White River Valley's daily needs. Leaving one Dark Knight with the two Phantom Assassins in case of emergency should be enough.'

'Constantine would take care of Daniela and Oren.'

'I have to go meet Ivan earlier.'



Things kept popping in Marvin's mind, and thus, he kept thinking over and over and didn't manage to get any sleep before it became dawn.

'Damn... I actually pulled an all-nighter.'

'Hold on, there is still something I didn't take care of.'

Marvin brought up his character window and looked at the pile of undistributed skill points and attributes points and patted his own head.

He was really too busy recently. After advancing he actually hadn't spent his skill points and attribute points!

His Ranger class had 24 points. Marvin thought for a moment and spent them on Listen. This skill was very extremely useful. Moreover, 50 points of Listen would enable [Eavesdrop], making these 24 SP very worth it.

As for Night Walker's 36 SP, Marvin hesitated but ended up spending another 20 in [Night Jump] and setting aside the remaining 16.

As for the Battle Gunner class he recently got, unfortunately Marvin couldn't spend the 30 points because his skills were temporarily unusable, as they were related to firearms after all. After returning Brilliant Purple to Constantine, he still didn't have his own pistol.

As for the most important two free attribute points...

Marvin was puzzled.

Keep stacking Dexterity? Or balance everything?

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 205: The Day Before the War

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

When he advanced to 3rd rank, Marvin's level rose up from 10 to 13, obtaining 2 free attribute points at the same time.

But now an issue came up. His Dexterity had already reached 25 points and he already had the two threshold abilities, [Anti-Gravity Steps] and [Flicker].

It could be said that his Dexterity was already very fierce, and the next threshold was at 29 Dexterity.

29 was the attribute limit of all humanoid lifeforms. To break this limit, one had to use various methods to raise their level of existence.

Acquiring a Divine Fragment was one way.

Marvin had a False Divinity which had the Divine Fragment of the World Ending Twin Snakes, so breaking through the 29 point limit wasn't an issue.

The main point was that his Dexterity already far exceeded his other attributes.

Of the other main attributes, his Strength was only at 15 points thanks to the Rock Giant Belt's bonus, and his Constitution was only at 13 points.

Strength influenced a Ranger's Attack Power. Even if Marvin's daggers were faster, if they couldn't break through the enemies' defenses, they were useless.

And Constitution also restricted the effect of his Dexterity.

Without enough Constitution, his super high Dexterity would be useless, not displaying the full effect.

Marvin faintly remembered that 1 Constitution could support 2 Dexterity.

It was more or less a 1 to 2 ratio.

In other words, with his 13 points of Constitution, Dexterity could only effectively reach 26. If Marvin put his two points in Dexterity, then even if his Dexterity reached 27, he could only display the effects of 26 points.

This was the restriction of Constitution.

This was the reason why no powerhouse had an abnormal growth. The six attributes complemented each other. There was some specialization, some emphasizing, but they couldn't be too far apart.

Marvin was very clear about the reasons.

But the problem was that Marvin felt it was a pity to assign precious attributes points to other attributes.

Free Attribute points were very rare.

Constitution and Strength could be raised with other methods.

He thought for a moment and ultimately put one point in Dexterity, raising it to 26, the highest he could make use of with his 13 Constitution.

As for that remaining point, he temporarily put it aside.

After the end of the war, he had to properly raise his Strength and Constitution.

'Strength needs to reach at least 20 points to get the threshold ability.'

'Constitution needs to reach 17. Only with that much could I make full use of my Ranger and Night Walker classes.'

Marvin made up his mind.

After spending that Attribute Point and those Skill Points, Marvin once again examined the logs.

His Path of Darkness quest had already disappeared, and he had received his mission reward.

10000 general exp.

Nothing else.

This outcome didn't shock Marvin. He had that feeling that the game system on his body was equivalent to a guide. Its existence was mainly to help Marvin blend into this world as quickly as possible.

It didn't have another effect.

But regardless, Marvin was already very grateful for this data system, or else he wouldn't have been able to know what to do after transmigrating.

And Marvin was very satisfied with 10000 general experience.

Getting experience was very difficult in Feinan. That Red Dragon he shot down only gave him 16000 experience.

Leveling up would become harder and harder.

Marvin currently had about 30000 exp with 20000 of those being battle exp and 10000 being general exp.

Despite this, it still wasn't enough to level up his Night Walker class. Level 5 Night Walker needed 35000 experience.

And to advance to Ruler of the Night from the Ranger path, his first requirement was Ranger level 8 and Night Walker level 9. His subclass could fill in for the total level, up to 4 levels.

Even if Marvin used the most cost effective way to advance to Legend, he would at least need Ranger level 8, Night Walker level 9, and Shapeshift Sorcerer level 6 (Half of the levels count toward the total level).

$8+9+3=20$ .

That would just reach the peak of 4th rank, Half Legend, and then for the next step he would need to level up either Night Walker or Ranger again.

Thus, the main point was still to level up these two main classes. After all, his second subclass [Battle Gunner] not only had an experience penalty, but it also wasn't counted in the total level.

The most efficient path was still to focus his experience on Night Walker and Ranger.

However, as for his other subclass, who knew when he could get his Shapeshift Sorcerer to reach 2nd rank... This depended on his awakened bloodline.

With Marvin's natural talent, he wouldn't have been able to awaken his Shapeshift Sorcerer bloodline without the Fortune Fairy. It wouldn't be strange if he was stuck at 1st rank all his life. Thus he didn't have much hope that this subclass would be too much help on his road to Legend rank. Only if...

'Only if I find a way to break through 2nd rank.'

'In that case, I'll need to deal with the Cridland clan. They are the ones who understand the Shapeshift Sorcerer class the best after all.'

Truth to be told, Marvin was a bit conflicted with the sudden appearance of that clan.

But he mostly accepted it.

If he wasn't a Cridland, he wouldn't have awakened the Shapeshift Sorcerer bloodline. White River Valley's inheritance had always been a bit strange. From his grandfather's time, the family only had a name, no family name. When Marvin asked his father, he didn't give any details.

Thinking about it, his grandfather probably had been in a dilemma. He didn't want to choose another family name to inherit, but if he used the Cridland surname, it would easily be found out by the Lavis' royal family.

Thus he simply didn't use a family name.

'Marvin Cridland?'

Marvin leaned on a pillow and thought in a daze.

'Not a bad name.'

...

The temporary camp was taking shape on the east end of White River Valley.

This place was about 8 kilometers from the Ogre mountain and there was a wide open field between the two. It would be very difficult to mount a sneak attack there.

The adventurers worked with the logistics team to build all kinds of facilities.

The war mobilization order issued by Marvin clearly explained the enemies' circumstances.

More than 40 Ogres!

That was a very frightening number.

Each Ogre was already an elite type of monster. They were born with the strength of a 2nd rank.

Most Ogres would quickly mature and when they grew older, they would take the initiative to leave the tribe and choose a place they liked to slowly finish their days.

Thus, there were rarely infant or elder Ogres in a tribe.

More than 40 Ogres, most of which were at the 3rd rank.

There also should be some 4th rank Ogres. As for Legends.... The adventurers didn't know much about it.

But the information Marvin had clearly showed that this Ogre tribe had a Legend.

And most likely an Ogre Mage!

This was a very troublesome matter, especially after Daniela paid a visit.

Hathaway was far away in the Three Ring Towers. She recently started studying a secret spell, completely not looking after Marvin. Otherwise, if they had a Legend Wizard, this war would have been a lot simpler.

'The Ogre Magi, Ivan should be able to deal with it, or at least restrict it.'

'But the others, including the monsters on the mountain, can only be dealt with our own forces.'

Marvin rode a horse and slowly toured the camp.

Each person who saw him gave him a salute.

The matter of the Crimson Cross had already spread. Now, every adventurer was looking at Marvin with respect.

Before getting ready for this war, he had already made the best arrangements for White River Valley.

Anna and Wayne were still in charge of the territory. He ended up leaving half of the guards behind, along with a Phantom Assassin and a Dark Knight.

They should be enough to deal with all the issues that might arise in the territory.

Constantine was stuck dealing with Daniela and Oren. The only thing worth celebrating was that his cousin and that poised Knight seemed to be very patient.

Oren even passed a message from Lavis to Marvin: The matter of the treasure was a family matter in any case, so waiting for the war to end was fine.

As for how much of that message was real, Marvin didn't know.

In any case, Constantine's strength couldn't be used.

But fortunately... [Brilliant Purple] was once again borrowed by Marvin.

This thing was a Legendary Item able to kill a Dragon. Constantine was also quite helpless; he was tied to this pirate ship known as Marvin, so he could only make a gamble.

As for Marvin himself, he was actually very calm. If White River Valley and that future territory could be considered as a business company, then Constantine and the others could be considered as investors. He himself was a shareholder and the person in charge of the company. In any case, he had already given many empty checks. So what if there were a few more?

The Red Dragon's corpse, the gold mine, and the rare materials under the Ogre Mountain. Marvin had already shown the ability of those subsidiary companies' founders fighting for venture capital.

The project had yet to start that their prospects seemed already within reach.

He gathered all the forces he had.

...

The Silver Church' Knights and Clerics were ready. White Gown Collins was already leading them.

River Shore City's two armies also reported to Marvin, bringing along six trebuchets and twenty-five people to use them!

The Ashes Tower's Wizard Corps also arrived at the battlefield today. Their leader was that witch wearing a purple gown who had almost killed Marvin at the entrance of Magore Academy. She was called Shirley.

This 2nd rank Wizard corps was made up of eighteen people and strictly consisted of battle casters Hathaway chose. Each of them possessed impressive strength.

As for White River Valley's side, apart from the adventurers Marvin recruited, more than ten guards and some militia followed Marvin.

But most of them would take the duty of messengers. At the same time, Marvin wanted to toughen them.

The core of his strength was still those seventeen Dark Knights following behind Marvin!

While Marvin was riding on his horse, he saw the smoke in the distance. This was a symbol of provocation from the Ogres.

Obviously, it was impossible for the humans' large scale constructions to not alert them.

The Ogres weren't fools.

They already made preparations to fight.

War is coming.

---

– Character Window –

Name: Marvin Cridland

Race: Human/Numan

Attributes:

[Strength] – 16

[Dexterity] – 26 (?+1)

[Constitution] – 13

[Intelligence] – 15

[Wisdom] (Perception) – 16

[Charisma] – 15(+1)

Life Classes:

[Noble] lv4 (0/800)

[Blacksmith] lv3 (32/600)

Battle Classes:

[Ranger] lv7 (0/20000)

[Night Walker] lv4 (0/35000)

[Shapeshift Sorcerer] lv4 (0/23000)

[Battle Gunner] lv1 (0/4800)

Titles:

[Chaotic Battle Expert]

[Newborn Ranger]

[Rope Master]

[Legend Killer]

[Dragon Slayer]

[HP]: 667

[Exp]:

0 (Noble)

19211 (Battle exp) [Available]

10000 (General exp) [Available]



[Skill Points]:

0 (Ranger)

16 (Night Walker) [Available]

30 (Battle Gunner) [Available]

Attribute Points: 1 [Available]

[Divinity]: False Divinity

[Divine Fragments]: 1 (World Ending Twin Snakes)

[Divine Power]: 0

[Specialties]:

[Classes Specialties]:

Two-Weapon Fighting (Ranger)

Reckless Dual Wielder (Ranger)

Nocturnal (Night Walker)

Night Kill (Night Walker)

Superior Reflex (Night Walker)

Quick Study (Noble)

Boundless Shapeshifting (Shapeshift Sorcerer)

[Personal Specialties]:

Versatile

Endurance

Burst

[Class Skills]

[Noble] (Baron):

Dignity (27)

Management (31)

Awareness (16)

Diplomacy (19)

Accounting (28)

Horsemanship (30)

[Ranger]:

Hide (46+9)

Stealth (101)

Inspect (37)

Climb (20)

Listen (49)

[Night Walker]:

Eternal Night (50)

Summon Night Crow (22)

Night Jump (70)

Shooting Blades (10)

Personal Skills:

Hidden Weapon – Darts (26)

Hidden Weapon – Throwing Knives (5)

Hidden Weapon – Flying Needles (5)

Cutthroat (56)

Shadow Step (43)

Edge Snatch (42)

Demon Hunter Steps

[Personal Spells]:

1st-circle – Vine Metamorphosis

Shadow Doppelganger (Book of Nalu, Bloodline)

Night Tracking (Blessing of the Night Monarch)

Shapeshift Basilisk

Origami

[Shapeshift] (Human Form)

Charming Looks

Transforming Magic Cube

Disguise

[Shapeshift] (Beast Form)

Asuran Bear – Skills:

Intimidating Roar

[Shapeshift] (Shadow Form)

Shadow – Spells:

Shadow Bind

Shadow Arrow

?

[Equipment]:

[Sika Deer badge]

[Pair of Curved Daggers Fangs]

[Blazing Fury] (2)

[Ghastly Gloves]

[Ring of Wishes] (Original)

[Wishful Ropes]

[Mark of the Moon]

[Vanessa's Gift]

[Mask of the Deceiver]

[Magic Holy Grail]

[Wristband of Gratitude]

[Thunder Ring]

[Rock Giant Belt]

[Contracted]:

[Wind Fairy]

[Items]

Deepwater Gems – Engineering Blueprints – Gold Bars – Ancient Book  
(Unknown/Scarlet Monastery) – Annihilation (Black Jack's weapons) – Treasure Map  
(Great Devil Head).

[Forces]:

White River Valley

Southie

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 206: Iron Ogre

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Next day. The temporary camp was officially completed.

All the forces settled in according to Marvin's arrangements.

And even more adventurers were lingering outside the camp, ready to pick up some benefits after the battle began.

Noon.

All soldiers who were about to participate in this war had gathered outside the camp.

Indeed, no matter what your identity was before, when participating in a wilderness clearing military campaign, your identity would be that of a soldier.

You had to listen to the overlord's orders.

Regardless of what you thought, you at least had to show that you were doing your work.

Everyone gathered outside the camp grouped with the power they belonged to.

Marvin rode a horse and slowly rode over from the north.

He had a saber at his waist. This was the sword his grandfather used in those days to clear new territory.

It was his turn now.

This kind of pre-battle mobilization was mostly to boost morale. But the problem was that Marvin's troops were formed from all kinds of people.

Apart from a few people, they didn't have any loyalty to Marvin.

Marvin estimated that regardless of what he said, it wouldn't be very effective in encouraging them to fight bravely.

Thus, he simply drew his saber and figuratively locked swords with the soldiers at the front line before turning back to return to his previous position.

Then, he raised his sword high and shouted.

"Glory!"

"Wealth!"

"Development!"

His voice was loud and clear, echoing in everyone's ears like a thunder clap.

That was because he used a magic scroll.

Apart from those Wizards, everyone's mind shook. Their sight all gathered on Marvin's body before focusing on the edge of that saber.

Marvin looked at this scene with satisfaction, as he looked over all the forces.

"Warriors."

"Our elders explored the wilderness countless times, continuously clearing out safe pieces of lands from the monsters."

"Now it's our turn to follow their glory, to set out in the wilderness."

"I, Baron Marvin, according to the wilderness clearing order issued by the South Wizard Alliance, will guide you to clear new lands!"

"Today's battle is only the beginning. We can obtain wealth and resources far beyond what you can imagine."

"We can't stop."

"Every monster will be cleanly slaughtered by us. Five years, ten years later, this place will be extremely prosperous. And we will be rewarded for helping the Alliance open up new territories."

"Nobility titles, owning a territory, money, beauties... Everything would be readily available."

"Now, join me and draw your weapons!"

Marvin was roaring as he reached the final sentence.

"Clang!"

A chaotic but clear sound of iron immediately echoed!!

Everyone drew their weapons.

They were silently looking at Marvin. It didn't matter what kind of goal they previously had for participating in this war. Since it was a battlefield, they only had one goal, and that was to beat down the enemies!

Their enemies were frightening Ogres after all!

One small team of humans might not necessarily match an Ogre.

At that time, thinking of casually fighting would simply lead to death.

Marvin lifted his sword and slashed it down toward the tall mountain!

"Woosh!"

A slashing sound could be heard.

"Set off!"

The army slowly started marching.

...

On the Ogre mountain, huge but inflexible silhouettes were frantically busying themselves.

They were building fortifications.

Ogres weren't just wild monsters. Some of the Ogres had high Intelligence and were able to speak Common language.

They had also heard some things about the wilderness clearing order.

Along with that black clothed old man's warning, they were already making proper preparations.

That entire Ogre tribe had forty-five Ogres, and each of them was in the prime of his life.

They had migrated from the Shrieking Mountain Range in order to survive, and they hadn't attacked White River Valley because the monsters of the Shrieking Mountain Range were restricted by a powerful binding force.

They were shackles set up by God Lance in those days.

But this binding power would stop working when outsiders came to attack them.

All the Ogres were very excited!

They had always wanted to go down the mountain to taste the flavor of humans, but they never had an opportunity before.

Gnoll meat was really too bitter, they simply couldn't swallow it.

And now, Marvin issued a wilderness clearing order, launching an attack on them first. This meant they would be able to freely retaliate.

They could wantonly rush into human territory and occupy their domain.

This was something every man-eating beast yearned for.

In fact, if not for their boss strictly preventing them, most of the Ogres would have already rushed down and swung their weapons to crush these weak humans like pieces of meat.

They had been holding back their desire for blood for a long time.

They clearly couldn't understand why their leader insisted on defending the mountain. Wasn't rushing down to kill better?

These humans couldn't be the match of the powerful Ogres!

Every Ogre was born with a racial specialty, Innate Divine Strength, which meant that their Strength wouldn't be lower than 20 points!

This was a very frightening number.

There was also their overwhelming recuperative abilities and their fierce Constitution. Apart from their Dexterity being inferior, Ogres were almost the perfect fighters.

What about humans?

Humans were only a type of food in the Ogres' eyes, and it tasted pretty good.

But the leader's orders were greater than anything else in this Ogre tribe. They knew of his power, so they wouldn't easily offend him.

Since the leader said to defend their position, they would defend their position.

In any case, their boss also promised that there would be a day when he would lead them down the mountain to rush into the human territory to wantonly feed on their favorite prey.

...

Three kilometers west of the Ogre Mountain.

At Marvin's sign, the army stopped moving.

Both sides could see each other from this distance.

Moreover, a handful of minutes was enough for an adult Ogre to rush into the group of humans. Thus, keeping a certain distance was necessary.



But tight fortifications could be seen from the bottom of mountain till halfway up.

This wasn't usual for Ogres.

Marvin frowned.

If they forced an attack, the battle might turn very miserable. The Ogres occupied the high ground and they had a lot of rocks on hand. With their frightening arm strength they could throw rocks half a kilometer away!

If they tried to climb the mountain, they might be crushed to death before even being able to attack an Ogre!

'This is just wonderful...'

Marvin noticed the fearful expressions of the people behind him. Their physical bodies were ordinary, and they would definitely die if they were smashed by a rock.

'There must be a way to get these monsters down the hill.'

Marvin brandished his sword and immediately issued his first command.

Soon, the six trebuchets, under the protection of the River Shore City's guards, slowly moved forward.

The other troops also scattered, keeping their distance while slowly moving to encircle the hill.

Since the Ogres didn't want to come down, they didn't have to worry about the Ogres charging for now.

Marvin's strategy was simple. Regardless of how, they had to force the Ogres down!

Forcing them to fight on level ground was the only way to achieve victory.

And Madeline's six trebuchets seemed to be the key to victory.

Ordinary trebuchets would have an effective range of somewhere from 1/4 kilometers to 1/3 kilometers.

But the trebuchets Madeline sent weren't ordinary.

They were enchanted and their range was doubled.

Each trebuchet had 4 soldiers in charge of operating it, while the last one acted as the commander.

The logistics group was in charge of moving a cart with rocks. The rocks were covered with pine resin and warm oil.

Even if it was a probing attack, Marvin still wanted to reveal as many of the Ogre's cards as possible.

Under the everyone's protection, the army arrived about 800 meters away from the foot of the Ogre's mountain.

Six trebuchets were at a fixed distance from each other as the soldiers nervously adjusted their angle while beginning to aim.

And the Ogres on the mountain were clearly uneasy.

Some Ogres violently threw rocks from the mountain.

They were thrown very far, but they were still some distance away from the human group.

Under Marvin's command, everyone got ready. Once Ogres rushed over due to being enraged, the army would fight according to Marvin's strategy.

Only in that way could they use the least amount of casualties to take over the mountain.

"Lord Marvin, the trebuchets are done preparing!" the commander loudly yelled.

Marvin's saber pointed at the "fort" the Ogres established halfway up the mountain and gave the order, "Fire!"

Then, bouncing sounds echoed as dozens of crushed rocks were sent out from the human front line. With the enchantments, each rock flew very far.

On top of that, because the rocks were smeared with oil and pine resin, they ignited themselves in the air as a result of friction!

"Rumble!"

The rocks were scattered as they hit the Ogre fort. In a short time, chaos began to appear on the mountain.

"Keep going!" Marvin firmly said.

Soon, another batch of projectiles were ready.

Everyone was extremely nervous as they watched the scene.

After three volleys, that spot in the mountain had already transformed into a sea of fire, and the Ogres were extremely angry.

Although these flames couldn't harm them, it still enraged them.

They bellowed one after the other, wanting to rush down the mountain while baring their teeth.

But what shocked Marvin was that this group of Ogres still hadn't come down to fight!

'Who is their boss after all?'

Marvin tried to find clues, but since the Ogres alike to him, he couldn't find out who was giving orders.

"Lord? Do we continue?" asked the trebuchet commander.

Marvin had yet to answer when an Ogre whose skin was light-black showed up at that spot!

He bellowed and directly jumped down the mountain!

"Bang!"

After a huge noise, a trebuchet had been pulverized into pieces.

And the Ogre was safe and sound.

Everyone was frightened.

The corner of Marvin's mouth twitched... [Iron Ogre]?

A Legend Ogre?!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 207: Legend Ogre

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The Iron Ogre was a relatively outstanding variant Ogre.

This kind of Ogre was usually very overpowered in melee battles, and had a very resistant body.

And this ogre up there was clearly one of those.

Legend Ogre!

Marvin frowned. He already knew that there was a Legend in this Ogre Tribe, but he thought it would be an Ogre Mage. He hadn't expected it to be an Iron Ogre!

This creature's attack power was really too frightening. It was also known as the "King of the Battlefield"!

In a few seconds, he had already destroyed two more trebuchets!

The soldiers next to the trebuchets weren't spared.

This guy falling from the sky was too exaggerated, and the others were shocked by his frightening strength.

The army Marvin gathered suddenly showed signs of falling apart.

'This Legend Iron Ogre's goal is to destroy all the trebuchets!'

'But, is it his idea, or someone else's instruction?'

This group of Ogres were determined to not leave the mountain. They want the humans to go up.

If that Iron Ogre was the leader, it would be manageable. As long as they got rid of him, the other Ogres would definitely go out of control.

Marvin would be victorious at that time.

But if it wasn't the case, it would be huge trouble.

Marvin couldn't tolerate the changes on the battlefield, so he quickly made a decision!

No matter what, this Legend Ogre needed to be stopped by someone!

He suddenly raised his voice and shouted, "Ivan!"

The next instant, the Elven Prince's athletic silhouette jumped down from another mountain on the side.

His jump was even more outrageous than the Iron Ogre's!

And his action was smoother than the Ogre's. He charged toward the Ogre in a flash!

"Bang!"

The Iron Ogre reacted, abruptly turning and sending a fist toward Ivan.

But the fierce Elven Saint didn't meet the Ogre's fist with his own. He adjusted his body in mid air and grabbed the Ogre's arm.

At the same time, he rotated his body, spinning in the air before landing on the ground.

"Roar!" The Iron Ogre snarled.

There was no change on Ivan's face. He used his hold on the Iron Ogre's arm to throw him away with a shoulder throw!

He sent him toward the uninhabited area in the north.

He clearly understood Marvin's goal, which was to send this Iron Ogre away from the battlefield!

They couldn't allow him to keep destroying the trebuchets!

Because apart from magic, this was the only way to force the Ogres down.

Ivan's strategy was very successful, as the Iron Ogre was sent hundreds of meters away. Not waiting for him to get up, Ivan frantically attacked him.

Even if the Iron Ogre was a Legend, his fighting ability couldn't compare with the Elven Saint.

In their fight, the Iron Ogre immediately fell in a disadvantage and was beaten down by Ivan's fists.

In a few instants, he was blown a few kilometers away by Ivan, far from the battlefield and unable to come back.

...

"That's the Elven War Saint, Sir Ivan!"

"Heavens, it turns out Lord Marvin still has these kinds of allies. No wonder he dared to issue a wilderness clearing order."

People gasped, extremely surprised.

Ivan's appearance gave that group of people someone to rely on.

Their morale rose up once again.

Marvin coldly said, "Keep firing!"

At that time, a group of guards from River Shore City and a group of knights from the Silver Church went next to the trebuchets.

They knew that those remaining three trebuchets definitely couldn't be destroyed.

They also didn't believe that the Ogre tribe had a 2nd Legend Iron Ogre!

The trebuchets' soldiers weren't just mildly scared.

The soldiers they fought shoulder to shoulder with were crushed by the Iron Ogre in an instant.

That wasn't the type of shock that average people could support.

Fortunately, these soldiers sent by Madeline were elites among elites.

Even under such dire circumstances, they still clenched their teeth and persevered to complete their own assignment.

They kept firing the trebuchets.

Volleys after volleys of burning rocks kept exploding on that fort halfway up the mountain. This time, the Ogres seemed to be unable to keep waiting.

They began to become extremely angry and no longer dodged those rocks.

Some Ogres angrily used their fists to smash those rocks out of the air. But even with Ogres' strong physical bodies, they would still be harmed from flying burning rocks.

Many Ogres began to loudly wail.

Marvin squinted, sneering in his heart, 'I don't believe the Ogres will be able to keep enduring for long in this kind of situation.'

...

Based on his experience, the arrogant and easily enraged Ogres should have already come down.

This kind of creature, even if they knew that defending their position would be quite favorable, they would still choose a direct and tenacious battle against the humans. This was their fighting style.

There was definitely someone restraining their behavior.

And from the current circumstances, it wasn't the Iron Ogre.

'Could it be...'

'There is another Legend!?'

This kind of thought appeared in Marvin's mind just when a red cloud suddenly formed above the three trebuchets!

'Shit. That's a [Burning Firerain]!'

'These Legend Wizards have no creativity. Even the Ogre Mages are the same!'

Marvin immediately became frustrated. He was about to order the soldiers to run away from the trebuchets, as running away with the trebuchets would have been impossible. They should save as many lives as possible!

This was a reduced version of Burning Firerain, but it had a good goal, which was to destroy the remaining three trebuchets!

For a spell to be cast from this far and form this fast... The caster must be a Legend!

The Wizards from the Three Ring Towers couldn't interfere with the casting!

But at that time, an extremely dark cloud flew over from another corner of the sky!

This black cloud came in contact with the red cloud, and instead of the expected exploding sound, the clouds merged together, extremely docile.

The two clouds smoothly fused and the Burning Firerain ended up as ordinary rain.

Marvin heard an unfathomable snarling voice coming from the top of the mountain.

He looked over there and saw a relatively small Ogre. He was holding a long scepter in his hands. The Ogres at his side were looking at him with fear etched in their eyes.

'That's the Ogre Leader!'

Everyone had realized.

But what happened with that failed Burning Firerain?

Marvin's heart was moved, as he looked toward the south.

A luxurious carriage had stopped there without anyone noticing. The adventurers gathered closed to it didn't dare to approach.

There was also a Knight next to the carriage.

Daniela.

She was the one who sent out that black cloud.

At the moment she was floating above the carriage, a pair of ice wings had solidified on her back and slowly spread open.

She had a few other changes. She became colder, and lively ice particles twisted and moved around her body. And she wasn't looking at that Ogre Leader.

'Is this the Ice Angel Shape?'

Marvin was also a bit stunned.

The Daniela in front of him already had some of the imposing manner of the future Ice Empress. As someone that controlled ice, quashing a Burning Firerain wasn't too difficult for her.

Marvin was about to thank her, but before he could, she turned and flew up north without a word!

On that side, a woman wearing an azure dress was leisurely approaching.

Bamboo!

...

Marvin had already expected today's fight to not be simple.

But he hadn't expected so many things to happen before the battle even started.

Ivan was facing the Iron Ogre, yet the reborn Bamboo was quietly approaching. If not for Daniela, he wouldn't have noticed her yet.

His younger cousin was true to her words. If she saw Bamboo, she definitely wouldn't rest until she killed her.

The Ice Angel filled the sky with snow and crazily charged toward Bamboo. The latter sneered and released a great amount of Divine Power.

An incredible battle was about to begin.



...

Everyone behind Marvin was foolishly looking at what happened.

Even the experienced and knowledgeable Collins couldn't help but force an awkward smile.

A simple wilderness clearing actually attracted so many Legends and Half-Legends. How could these 2nd rank and 3rd soldiers influence the outcome of the battle?

Fortunately, Marvin also had many people backing him.

"Rumble!"

At that time, the Ogre Mage took advantage of everyone being focused on Bamboo and the Ice Angel Daniela to send out a few Lightnings, destroying the remaining trebuchets!

This guy was apparently determined to not leave the mountain.

Marvin angrily grit his teeth and brought out Brilliant Purple's suitcase.

Since it came to this, he couldn't worry about money.

They wouldn't be able to fight unless that group of Ogres left the mountain. He couldn't miss!

But suddenly, a pair of steady hands landed on that suitcase.

"Let me."

Constantine.

He took the suitcase from Marvin's hands and opened it. In a mere handful of seconds, and to everyone's shock, he assembled [Brilliant Purple]!

This frightening killing device was facing the Ogre Mage.

"Let this Legend explode the mountain to see whether they will run down or not." Constantine sneered, ready to fire.

But that Legend Ogre Mage apparently felt the threat.

His magic staff suddenly aimed at Constantine and he casted three Dissociations in a row toward Constantine!

Instant Casting, Long Distance Casting, Multi Casting!

Three powerful Legendary Specialties!

Marvin felt worried. This Legend Ogre Mage was a lot more troublesome than he'd imagined.

He was so far away, yet was still able to cast three Dissociations!

Constantine was also startled. He clenched his teeth and carried Brilliant Purple as he tried to dodge.

"Bang!"

At that moment, a tall shadow appeared from nowhere and blocked in front of Constantine.

The three Dissociations exploded on that person's body.

But the latter came out unscathed.

That person softly laughed and turned around to say, "Shoot, Constantine."

"This Legend Ogre is a bit annoying."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 208: This Round is on Me

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Three Dissociations cast by a Legend!

Unscathed!

Marvin couldn't help but open his eyes wide, carefully sizing up that man in front of him.

His figure wasn't especially sturdy, but it was perfect. He was wearing simple black clothes all over which didn't have the aura of Legend or Magic items.

He had brown eyes and his appearance was a bit bashful.

He gave out the feeling of the older guy next door.

But a man like that was able to resist three Dissociation spells. Even his clothes suffered no damage.

This was simply inconceivable.

Seeing Marvin's puzzled look, that man laughed. "Hello Marvin."

"I am O'Brien. Don't worry, spells have no effects on me."

O'Brien.

Marvin naturally knew this name!

This generation's Night Walker leader, the most mysterious and lowkey Night Walker. Rumors said that he was fighting against evil forces all year round in the north. Why did he take the time to run over to White River Valley today?

'Could it be because I awakened the Dark Knights?' Marvin guessed.

Constantine on the side actually let out a long sigh of relief after O'Brien appeared.

Marvin noticed that Constantine was somewhat uncertain when facing the Ogre Mage.

He might not be able to deal with that opponent.

A Legend Ogre Mage was a powerful existence, and the biggest feature of Constantine who relied on Night Walker and Battle Gunner to advance to Legend was being an all-rounder, but that wasn't enough. Unless he had Endless Ocean's help, it was very difficult for him to handle powerful casters. This was why he needed the help of the Great Druid when he chased the Crimson Patriarch.

And this Ogre Mage's burst power seemed to be a bit stronger than the Crimson Patriarch's.

In any case, after O'Brien's silhouette appeared, Constantine immediately became a lot more relaxed.

He glanced at O'Brien and greeted, "Long time no see."

"Yeah. Long time no see." O'Brien didn't go toward them, walking toward the Ogre Mountain instead!

"It has been many years since we fought side by side."

"Help me with a small favor. I'm now interested in raising a Legend Ogre as a pet."

Marvin listened, dumbfounded.

This Night Walker leader was too fierce. He dared to say those words?

With the Legend Ogre's power, he could clearly hear each sentence.

As expected, the Ogre Mage on the mountain suddenly became enraged.

In an instant, spells began raining down.

Every spell was targeting O'Brien.

The latter had no change in his expression, he walked forward step by step.

"Legendary Spell Immunity?" Marvin struggled to say those words.

The Ogre Mage's casting speed wasn't slow. If a spell hit Marvin, he would be finished.

But O'Brien was firmly resisting so many spells without any issue!

This was too exaggerated.

That was a Legend Caster!

"Hey kid, don't be so surprised."

"This guy's brain is really simple. If his body wasn't good enough, how could he be our leader?" Constantine joked, very relaxed.

Marvin was speechless.

O'Brien who was still walking forward turned around. "You know I can still hear you?"

"Forget it, I won't bicker with you, I'm indeed not that crafty."

Constantine seriously said, "Leader, I am praising you."

He turned to Marvin and said, "See, this is also one of his few advantages. He recognizes his own shortcomings.

"Thus, even though I didn't understand why everyone chose him as the leader, I didn't shoot him with Brilliant Purple."

Marvin coughed, refusing to comment.

Constantine more seriously suggested, " Let your people retreat three kilometers."

Marvin nodded.

He immediately ordered that besides himself, everyone had move back three kilometers.

No one questioned Marvin's command. Everything that happened today already toppled their understanding of this world.

There was surprisingly a Legend in the Ogre tribe? And it wasn't just one? An Iron Ogre and an Ogre Mage? Could people still open a new territory?

The Elven War Saint was Lord Marvin's friend? And that recently appearing angel-like woman, who was she?

The adventurers didn't need to think too much to realize that those two people with frightening auras standing at Marvin's side were Legends.

Wasn't it supposed to be a regular wilderness clearing military campaign? Why did it suddenly turn into a war between Legends?

They all silently retreated, and even those unsolicited adventurers standing on the sides began to retreat.

They weren't fools. They noticed that those powerhouses intended to go all out.

They came to get benefits, not to be caught in the crossfire.

...

"What's your plan?" Marvin asked in a heavy voice.

"Helping you flatten that mountain." A hint of killing intent flashed through Constantine's eyes.

Those three Dissociation spells had also frightened him. If not for O'Brien, he might have had no other choice but to block with Brilliant Purple!

This made him very angry.

He set up Brilliant Purple and adjusted the angle in an instant, aiming at the summit!

"Many thanks." Marvin put his hand on his chest. "This round is on me."

After all, since the six trebuchets were ruined, only Constantine's long distance firepower could force the Ogres down.

Ever since he became a Night Walker, he hadn't helped the organization and only asked for help. He felt a bit embarrassed about it.

This dragon tooth artillery shell could obviously be put on his tab.

Constantine asked with a strange expression, "Really?"

"Of course." Marvin looked at O'Brien resisting fierce spells one after the other and wondered what kind of classes and specialties that guy had, or if it was a magical ability that could let him accomplish this. He naturally wanted to know.

Constantine mischievously laughed, "Worthy of Lord Marvin, rich and overbearing. I had originally planned to foot the bill."

"After all, one round of [Dawn Light] is more expensive than a round of [Dragon Tooth].

'Hold on!'

'[Dawn Light]?'

Marvin's expression instantly changed and he stared at Constantine. "What did you say? You aren't using Dragon Tooth?"

"Of course." Constantine seriously informed, "Dragon Tooth munitions are very powerful, but they are linear, and the scope of damage is limited."

"I just talked about flattening that mountain."

"[Dawn Light] is the best artillery shell for that."

Marvin gulped. He had a bad feeling. "Wait, don't act so quickly. I want to know, how expensive is a Dawn Light round?"

"A bit more expensive than Dragon Tooth."

Constantine took out a spotlessly white artillery shell from a storage item and resolutely inserted it in Brilliant Purple.

He readied the lever as he aimed at the summit.

"How much!?" Marvin loudly asked.

"Snap!"

Constantine unhesitantly shot with Brilliant Purple.

The next second, a huge rumbling sound drowned out Marvin's voice while also shaking Marvin's eardrums. A white shooting star was shot from the cannon.

It had a different shooting pattern than Dragon Tooth. Dawn Light was shot in curve, flying toward the mountain's summit.

It wasn't that fast!

...

"What's that!"

"Such a frightening sound."

"Is that Lord Marvin's secret weapon?"

Three kilometers away, everyone was looking at that scene, dazed. They might never see such a shocking scene again in their lives.

Dawn Light quickly rose before splitting into countless tiny fragments that fell toward the summit.

Halfway up the mountain, the Ogre Mage felt something wrong. He raised his magic staff and tried to intercept these bullets carrying a frightening force.

Unfortunately, it was already too late.

O'Brien suddenly roared and the Ogre Mage's spell was interrupted!

Counterspell!

Marvin stood still next to Constantine. The previous shot almost made him deaf, and the following roar left him dazed.

'What's that guy class? Lion Roar? He can interrupt the enemy cast from this far?'

Marvin was looking at O'Brien full of awe.

Among all the powerhouses he met, that guy was an existence able to contend against Nicholas.

And compared with him, Inheim might be a bit inferior!

...

The Ogre Mage wasn't able to block Dawn Light. The next instant, those falling bullets suddenly burst with bright rays of light!

"Bang!"

Each bullet penetrated deeply into the mountain before exploding!

The entire mountain exploded. Countless rocks flew and rolled down as the whole mountain shook!

A cloud of dust flew up. Marvin narrowed his eyes, focusing his gaze to see through the obstruction. He saw that one third of the mountain was gone!

Such a frightening destructive power!

A huge amount of rocks rolled down, smashing onto the Ogres who were hopping around.

Finally, they rushed down under the Ogre Mage's bellow!

They already had no way out. If they kept hiding on the mountain, as soon as Constantine shot another Dawn Light, they would be buried alive!

Marvin's goal was finally reached. He took a deep breath and nodded, "This round is on me."

...

O'Brien turned his head. "Let's go Constantine. I can't catch him alive alone."

Constantine quickly put away Brilliant Purple and took out a shotgun before hanging it on his body. He equipped handguns on both hands and quickly went up.

The two men disappeared in the cloud of dust.

Marvin made a decision.

With these two great Legends dealing with the Ogre Mage, he should be able to deal with the rest of the Ogres.

"Everyone! Get ready to fight!"

Marvin urged his horse and circled back. The army was naturally looking at the scene. Even if that cloud of dust was huge, these Ogres' huge bodies couldn't be hidden in it.

They were all properly prepared and split up in groups, following Marvin's strategy.

"Lord Marvin, they are charging!"

The person in charge of the Silver Church was still the familiar Gordian. This guy was already at the 3rd rank.



He solemnly said to Marvin, "If we don't start a counter charge, we might not be able to handle it! Our defensive line will be ripped apart."

"It's fine, you guys follow behind us. The others, surround them! Don't let any escape," Marvin lightly said.

Then he turned back and dismounted. He shockingly rushed over toward the Ogres!

"Roar!"

Along with the tall Asuran Bear silhouette rushing into the cloud of dust were sixteen Dark Knights silently holding onto their greatswords as they followed Marvin to kill Ogres.

The most intense melee battle started at last.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 209: Heated Battle!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The two sides were like two powerful currents rushing through the cloud of dust.

The Asuran Bear was as massive as the Ogres. Marvin made the first move and fiercely pounced on an Ogre.

Sure enough, with Burst activated, that Ogre was pushed to the ground by his force.

"Bang! Bang!"

His paws viciously smacked the Ogre's head, creating bruises. But that guy's Constitution was too high. Even when pressed on the ground by the Asuran Bear, he could still resist.

His thick wooden club had fallen on the ground. He tried to grab it, but Marvin wouldn't give him this kind of opportunity.

"Roar!"

The Bear's paws ruthlessly plunged into the Ogre's eyes and dug out the eyeballs.

The Ogre wailed in pain, thoroughly losing his ability to resist!

Even if the Ogres were innate 2nd rank monsters, most adult Ogres were at the 3rd rank, but that was because of their huge bodies and strength!

The Ogres' extraordinary strength, special constitution, and fierce recovery ability were the reasons they could so easily advance to 3rd rank, or even 4th rank and have the strength of a Half-Legend.

But most Ogres stopped there, and very rarely would an Ogre advance to Legend by relying on his fighting strength.

They might have a very high strength, but they weren't comparable with the dragon race and such lifeforms.

The only exception might be the Iron Ogre and other variations. Under regular circumstances, it was slightly more common for Ogre Mages. This kind of creature was a moving mana pool, and if they had enough creativity and comprehension, they could advance to Legend.

Thus, Marvin didn't feel that the appearance of a Legend Ogre was something unexpected, but he was surprised by the appearance of the Iron Ogre.

But it didn't matter now.

Ivan was dealing with the Iron Ogre, Daniela and Bamboo were having fun, and if the Ogre Mage wanted to escape Constantine and O'Brien who joined hands, he would have to pray for a miracle!

These remaining Ogre Fighters would naturally be handled by his army!

...

Marvin led the sixteen Dark Knight to attack the Ogre army first.

They were just like a sharp blade, piercing through the center of the Ogre troops.

Marvin noticed that these Ogres still kept a certain type of formation, even under the threat of landslides.

This meant that they were trained.

But the Asuran Bear was fierce and unmatched. His strength could suppress them!

And even if the Dark Knights were only at the 2nd rank, they wouldn't lose to the Ogres in the Strength department.

They had the Brave Souls Pressure on their bodies and were greatly lowering the Ogres' fighting strength.

The sixteen silhouettes entered the Ogre army and opened a big hole in it.

...

"Let's go! Follow the plan and support Lord Marvin!"

Gordian's roar was followed by more than forty Silver Church Paladins setting out!

And on the side, River Shore City's Knights also set off.

They tightly followed Marvin and rushed to attack that gap.

Forcing the Ogres down the mountain was the first step of the plan.

The second step was to split them apart!

They couldn't let the Ogres stay together!

These monsters might be experts when fighting alone, but when they were together, they were like an invincible army. It would be a nightmare for whichever army met them on a battlefield.

And dividing up the battlefield was what Knights and Paladins excelled at!

Even if they were facing Ogres that were at least two meters tall, making them feel a bit weak, only by advancing courageously on the battlefield could the Knights and Paladins have a chance to survive.

The charge initiated by Gordian and River Shore City's Head Knight followed Marvin's opening and cut through them, forming two groups in the Ogre army.

Of the forty Ogres, the few 4th rank elite powerhouses and a dozen 3rd rank Ogres were fighting Marvin and the Dark Knights.

Those remaining were broken up into two groups separated from each other by Knights and Paladins.

The recruited adventurers swarmed around, and followed Marvin's previous military formation and held special weapons as they approached under the cover of the Knights.

The 2nd rank Wizard corps also moved.

Each 2nd rank Wizard could ride on a magic carpet and float at a low altitude, which could ensure their safety.

They began to attack the Ogres with well-timed spells, according to Marvin's previous command.

...

"Roar!"

After an intense fight, the Asuran Bear finally crushed the Ogre's head into paste!

This also used up quite a bit of stamina for Marvin.

The Ogre's recovery ability was too powerful and it's melee abilities were top class. Killing one used up so much of his stamina.

Fortunately, he wasn't alone!

Each Dark Knight could fight a powerful Ogre one on one.

Their armors were extremely sturdy and their bodies very strong.

Even if they were swept by an Ogre's thick club, they would be standing up a few seconds later, slashing their greatswords at the Ogres' chests.

Both sides were in an endless struggle, creating a deadlock for the time being.

Marvin didn't forget to check the situation around the chaotic battlefield.

It seemed to be moving in the direction he wanted.

The battlefield was split in three parts. The main battlefield was happening around him and his Dark Knights.

The Ogres locked there were the strongest.

And to the north and the south, even if they lost many people during the cavalry charge, they had successfully split the Ogres.

Each Ogre was facing the attacks of ten or more enemies!

These enemies included the Knights or Paladins who rushed, adventurers holding iron chains, specialized in restraining their movements, sturdy Fighters, rogues holding bows or crossbows sneak attacking, and Wizards who kept using their spells to attack, effectively injuring the Ogres!

Even though the Ogres were powerful, but in the face of Marvin's tactics, they were seriously weakened.

Even if someone could die any moment, Marvin had already done everything he could to deal with the Ogres, those war machines.

Both the northern and southern battlefield already had an Ogre collapsed on the ground.

The tactics seemed to be effective.

Next would be a very long heated battle. They just had to keep going and the Ogres would be defeated!

...

After the cloud of dust rose up, the Ogres were the first monsters to rush out, but they weren't the only monsters living on the mountain.

Soon, loud howling sprung all around as a large amount of wolves swiftly rushed down from the mountain. Behind them was a huge swarm of Goblins, Gnolls, Kobolds, as well as other relatively strong creatures.

In all likelihood, these monsters were the Ogres' subordinates.

Marvin had already included them in his plan.

He leapt high and used [Intimidating Roar] toward those beasts in the distance!

The Dark Knights also used their own [Brave Souls Pressure] to scare those monsters!

In an instant, that side was in chaos and most low level lifeforms couldn't help but be completely intimidated by such a fierce aura.

The Wizards corps immediately switched the target of their firepower and a large amount of long range spells were sent over, reaping the lives of groups of these insignificant lifeforms.

It was all going according to the plan!

After Marvin helped a Dark Knight kill another Ogre, his stamina was more or less exhausted.

He had to turn back to a human.

This was definitely somewhat dangerous on the battlefield.

Two Dark Knights immediately rushed over, one on the left, one on the right, protecting him.

He intended to retreat and take command of the army once again.

This was a huge war, which was far from a simple and refreshing adventure. As long as there were enemies in front of you, you had to kill them.

As the commander, Marvin had to understand the overall situation. After breaking through the enemy line, victory was only a matter of time.

They needed time to be victorious. And Marvin had to stay calm, looking for any variables that might appear.

He temporarily withdrew from the battlefield.

...

In the north, two unrelated battles were still underway.

Bamboo and Daniela.

Ivan and the Iron Ogre.

Both sides occupied a side of the wasteland to fight their extremely vicious battles.

Despite both battles having the same intensity, their ways of fighting were completely different.

No matter if it was Daniela or Bamboo, they were both powerful casters. Even if their battle was just as lively, it was a battle of spells.

In any case, the Ice Angel Daniela was indeed extremely powerful!

'To actually be able to face off against one of the strongest Half-Legend Chosen, Shapeshift Sorcerer's bloodline is really extremely valuable.'

'No wonder the Cridland clan values the purity of the bloodline to that extent.'

But judging from the fight between both sides, Bamboo clearly hadn't recovered to her peak. She had moved so quickly to look for him, wanting to use this opportunity to wreck his operation.

But she hadn't expected that Marvin's group would have a variable like Daniela.

Both sides were in a stalemate. The one who would end up winning had yet to be determined, but Daniela shouldn't be in too much trouble. She was the woman who would become the future Ice Empress after all.

As for the other side, Ivan and the Iron Ogre's battle looked very uncivilized.

Both sides' strength wasn't as balanced as the women's.

The Iron Ogre was being suppressed. Ivan was basically toying with the Iron Ogre.

But the Iron Ogre's Constitution was really too fierce. Ivan had the strength to kill a Dragon but he could only beat the Ogre until the latter kept vomiting blood.

After a moment, he would stand up once again and keep fighting Ivan.

'It is simply the most perfect training partner.' Marvin shook his head.

He assessed that the Iron Ogre's legendary specialties were bound to be [Major Recovery] and [Rapid Regeneration].

These two great legendary specialties made him able to barely survive under Ivan's rain of attacks.

But It was only barely surviving, as his defeat was already set in stone.

Marvin sighed in relief.

He already assessed the situation.

But at that time, a roar was issued from the biggest Ogre.

He had brown skin and only had one eye.

After that roar, all the Ogres surprisingly took the same action and began to move closer to him.

'No good!'

'This guy is their battlefield commander. He has the power to gather his people.'

'Can't let him do that!'

Marvin's heart sank and he immediately roared, "Gordian!"

The Paladin in the cloud dust clearly understood Marvin's intention!

And that was to stop those Ogres from gathering!

They needed the Knights and Paladins to set up another charge to scatter them.

This also meant that they would lose many more people.

The Ogres weren't that easy to handle. Every time they charged, a Knight or a Paladin would get forcefully dismounted and crushed to death.

But even then, River Shore City's Knights and Silver Church's Paladins still silently gathered.

The adventurers had no way to trap the Ogres. They were too strong.

Even if more than ten Ogres had already fallen on the battlefield, once these monsters gathered, they would be an overwhelming force.

They had to stop this!

"Charge!"

Under the lead of Gordian and that Head Knight, the cavalry charged once again!

They were set on keeping the Ogres split into the north and south group.

As for Marvin, his sight was set on that Ogre issuing orders!

'The commander needs to die!'

'As long as I kill him, this war would end up in our victory!'

Killing intent filled Marvin's eyes.

"Woosh!"

Suddenly, two daggers appeared in his hands as he took a few steps back and started running toward a Dark Knight.

"Gimme a boost!"

Following Marvin's shout, the Dark Knight put his hands together to allow Marvin to jump on it, before using force to send him flying toward the battlefield.

Anti-Gravity Steps, Flicker!



26 points of Dexterity gave Marvin such frightening nimbleness. It was as if he was using those movement techniques from the novels in his past life as he quickly walked through the battlefield by stepping on his enemies and his allies' shoulders.

In a few seconds, he arrived at the commander.

With a flash of cold light, his daggers slashed down as he said, "Move! This Ogre is mine!"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 210: Bloody Devil King

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The situation suddenly became unstable on the battlefield.

Marvin's powerful thrust made the other Ogre a bit unnerved. A few Ogres in the surroundings immediately broke away from their fights and immediately rushed over.

They wanted to protect him!

This reinforced Marvin's assessment that this guy was truly the battle commander. As for those two Legends, whether it was the Iron Ogre or the Ogre Mage, they were only leaders.

War was an art. The difference between those who knew how to command people and those who didn't could clearly be seen on the battlefield.

Marvin ignored those other Ogres, his two daggers still ruthlessly slashing down!

"Bang!"

The Ogre Commander did his best to raise his wolf teeth club. "Clang!" Sparks flew everywhere.

Marvin took advantage of the fact that he was falling.

His daggers locked with the wolf teeth club as he sent power to his waist, and his legs went under the club and pressed against the Ogre's forehead!

...

The few Ogres in the surrounding who wanted to gather together didn't have their wishes fulfilled!

The Dark Knights appeared, holding their greatswords, and ferociously forced that group of Ogres back.

For these Dark Knights, Marvin was just like the former Night Monarch, someone they swore to protect with their lives.

Marvin wanted to make it a one on one situation, and they would accomplish this even if it cost their lives.

In fact, they also had the ability to do so.

Gordian and River Shore City's Head Knight initiated the second charge on the northern and southern battlefield.

The sounds of war horses' hooves resounded on the battlefield. The armored cavalymen with pikes were ruthlessly charging towards those groups of Ogres.

They vowed to split these Ogres into pieces.

But it was a lot more difficult this time.

The Ogres were recklessly rushing toward their commander, this made the cavalry a lot more passive.

Even though this charge temporarily stopped the Ogres from moving, killed three of them and kept them split between the northern and southern side of the battlefield, the losses on Marvin's side were even more disastrous!

A third of the Knights and Paladins lost their war horses, and a quarter of the men were smashed, lightly hurt or seriously wounded. A young Knight died on the spot!

This was the cruelty of war.

Those adventurers hovering around the battlefield didn't dare to approach. They could only try to kill an Ogre that got isolated. But for common adventurers, Ogres were very dangerous creatures.

Despite over ten people attacking one Ogre at a time, they still lost ten people before successfully killing this Ogre.

This displayed Ogres' power. If not for their rather limited intelligence, and their low reproductive ability, these guys would have been mankind's nightmare.

A howl was heard on the battlefield.

Most of the soldiers' faces carried a hint of fear.

They couldn't do anything about it. Each Ogre was more than two meters tall and extremely strong. Even they were cut down by a greatsword, they would quickly recover, as long as they weren't hit in the heart.

This made people feel very helpless!

And Marvin's allied armies already had a lot of casualties. This seriously influenced their morale.

If not for Marvin still fighting, and the Dark Knights doing their utmost, the army might have already collapsed!

At that time, White Gown Collins strode forward and loudly chanted a Divine Spell.

That old fox finally acted.

Silvery white light condensed on the battlefield, and a large scale Divine Spell could be seen appearing.

The silver light enveloped all the Ogres. Each Ogre's movements seemed to get delayed!

Divine Spell – Slow!

The Ogres were originally slow, but after the Divine Spell, they movements were so slow they seemed to be full of gaps.

This would give time for Marvin to kill Ogre Commander.

Collins' grasp of the battlefield was also first rate.

Under his lead, the Silver Church's Clerics also began to use the Divine Spells they excelled at on the battlefield.

These Divine Spells couldn't directly kill the Ogres, but they could debuff them or buff their allies, and that was enough to even out the odds.

...

On the battlefield, Marvin's body twisted, dodging under the wolf teeth club. He was hanging upside down on the Ogre's body!

He attacked behind his own back with the two daggers!

The Ogre Commander's painful howl erupted.

Because those two daggers were stabbed extremely precisely into the Ogre's kneecap by Marvin!

He let go and once again used his waist to immediately roll past the Ogre's head!

"Bang!"

Marvin kicked the Ogre's back.

This extremely strong guy wasn't able to control his own body and fell to his knees!

"Snap! Snap!"

The daggers stuck into the Ogre's kneecap forcibly scraped it out due to the latter's body weight.

A painful roar once again echoed. His hand holding the wolf teeth club was shaking!

Marvin turned around and extremely nimbly retrieved the two daggers.

"Woosh!"

The wolf teeth club was ruthlessly sweeping over again. This time, the Ogre Commander's attack range was very wide. Despite Marvin promptly jumping back, it still brushed past his chest.

The stinging pain irritated Marvin.

It was bloody.

Marvin's heart was beating quickly.

If that truly hit, he would have lost his life!

This was the terrible issue with fighting a huge creature. Despite Marvin's huge Dexterity, the other side could still find an opportunity.

The creature might survive dozens of his slashes.

But if it hit Marvin once, he would be done for.

A Dual Wielding Ranger would be really helpless when facing some monsters. It was truly a class walking on the edge!

But there would be some changes once he advanced to Ruler of the night.

As a rogue, Marvin didn't lack high speed movement skills, but he lacked skills to disengage during battles.

Assassins were skilled in that field, with Vanish, Strong Invisibility, Shadow Dodge... All kinds of high level disengaging tools would make them have an easier time when fighting meat shields.

But if an Assassin wanted to kill an Ogre, it would be very troublesome. Their defensive power and Constitution was really too strong.

It was almost impossible for short weapons to deal a fatal blow to the Ogres.

Cutthroat? The neck was extremely thick, so even if Cutthroat cut through it, they could still rely on their powerful recovery.

Stab the heart? With the Ogres' tough skins, ordinary assassins simply couldn't break through.

Apart from this, they nearly had no weak points.

To kill them, the only option besides spells was a direct confrontation.

And Marvin was doing that!

Relying on his super high Dexterity, he dismembered this Ogre Commander little by little!

This was something he was good at.

...

Painful roars kept echoing as Ogres on both sides were doing their best to try to help.

But the Dark Knights were a lot tougher than they imagined.

They formed a defensive formation, leaving enough space for Marvin and the Ogre Commander inside.

No other Ogre could come closer.

Their battle experience was frightening. Even if they weren't on the same rank as those Ogres, they could keep them out easily by relying on their strength and willpower.

The Knights and Paladins on both sides were also extremely tired. Even if the Clerics treated them, every survivor of those charges had deep and shallow wounds, and these wounds were ghastly.

There were three bloody scars on Gordians' face. He wiped his sweat and said, "What did Marvin do, to make that Ogre howl so miserably?"

His gaze swept through the battlefield, stopping on a fierce fight.

The next second, he felt a shiver running down his spine!

Because at that moment, an expressionless Marvin suddenly attacked from behind and forcefully cut off half of the Ogre's arm!

The thick forearm flew in the sky before finally landing on the ground.

Marvin looked like a grim butcher, cutting the Ogre's body little by little.

He already couldn't stand up after his kneecap was scraped out, so he could only kneel on the ground and fight Marvin.

But Marvin didn't give him an opportunity after that.

His wolf teeth club had already been kicked away by Marvin.

His body was slowly being chopped apart slash by slash.

Burst!

Reckless Dual Wielder!

He moved around the Ogre Commander, using the same kinds of methods as Black Jack back when he was toying with that Bear.

His Demon Hunter Steps kept becoming more illusory.

The Ogre simply couldn't resist. He received another slash carrying enough strength to cut down his body.

In thirty seconds, the entire battlefield fell silent!

Every Ogre was dumbstruck.

Marvin was like a bloody devil king standing next to the Ogre Commander whose limbs were cut off.

The pitiful Ogre Commander was like a limbless doll... It was what they liked to do to humans.

The Ogres were thoroughly angry, and they raised their head and bellowed, incessantly roaring.

Marvin coldly said, "Noisy things."

He kicked on the Ogre Commander lying on the ground. He then crossed his daggers above the Ogre's nape and slashed!

The two daggers penetrated the Ogre's neck, and were stuck inside.

"Fucking annoying..."

Marvin was ready for that. He leapt in the air and did a flip, and his feet stomped on the daggers!

The two daggers sank down, beheading the Ogre Commander on their way.

Then, all the Ogres went berserk.

But this was what Marvin wanted.

They began to fight their own battles, disregarding everything as they randomly attacked people next to them, no longer using group tactics.

'Phew, the plan is successful...'

'Now it's time to surround and kill them.' Marvin sighed in relief.

At that time, the graceful Elven Prince came from the battlefield in the wasteland up north, dragging something with him.

"How did it go?" Marvin asked.

Ivan shrugged. "His Common is too messy."

"Before he lost consciousness, he said the word, [Devil]."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## **Read Night Ranger - Chapter 211: Archdevil**

Chapter 211: Archdevil

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Devil?

Marvin took a deep breath. Sure enough, that group of Ogres was related to the Devil.

The connection between that black clothed old man he met outside the Groll tribe and the treasure hidden in the castle was gradually clearing up.

Many clues were fitting together, as if they were pieces of a puzzle gradually taking shape.

That Three Eyed Great Devil Head pattern appeared in Marvin's mind.

Numen gained something from the Devil there, and the Cridland clan was the Numen descendant... His grandfather took away a treasure from the Lavis royal family when he left home that year and it was now buried in White River Valley, and it brought quite a bit of trouble.

Regardless of what that item was, it would definitely not be unrelated to Hell.

Daniela wanted it, so she must have known what it was.

In a few instants, Marvin came up with all kinds of ways to probe Daniela for more information.

But right now, the most important matter was still to end this war.

"Do you think this Iron Ogre still has some value?" Marvin asked.

Ivan shook his head, "This guy's intelligence is frighteningly low. I suspect he doesn't know our language and just used random words together."

"Killing it is," Marvin calmly said.

"Finally." Ivan shrugged and drew a worn-out iron sword from somewhere before ruthlessly beheading the unconscious Iron Ogre.

He then impaled the Iron Ogre's heart, twisting and thoroughly mashing it. He only stopped after confirming the Iron Ogre was already dead.

Ivan's way of handling it wasn't unreasonable.

The Iron Ogre's recovery ability was too powerful. Even if it was beheaded, it might regrow a head. You had to completely destroy its vitals to kill it.

...



As Marvin looked at the dusty battlefield, every Ogre was struggling.

But they were quite violent. Adventurers, Paladins and Knights were greatly injured.

But what made Marvin pleased was that his Dark Knights didn't sustain any injuries.

After experiencing the long Eternal Night's war, they were a lot better at keeping themselves in peak fighting condition. And their powerful strength and reaction speed made it a lot easier for them to survive on the battlefield.

"It's time to end this war."

Marvin nodded to Ivan and the latter kicked the Iron Ogre's head high up in the sky.

Marvin leapt up and roared. He viciously stepped onto the Iron Ogre's head in front of all these ogres!

That head's mouth was still bleeding endlessly.

The obstinate Ogres were dumbfounded.

The Iron Ogre was an existence like a war god in their minds.

If their commander died, they could still be angry, but now that a Legend powerhouse died, it made the remaining Ogres panic!

Their morale rapidly declined, and some Ogres even began to flee in disorder!

"Everyone! Hunt them down!"

"Give them the last blow!" Marvin coldly ordered.

Not far from the dusty battlefield, O'Brien and Constantine were walking together. The former was carrying a crystal ball in his hands.

In the crystal ball was a miniature version of an Ogre baring his fangs.

Marvin sighed in relief. This time it was really over.

...

Half an hour later, the cloud of dust had calmed down.

Forty Ogre's bodies were lying down on the battlefield as well as many other monsters' bodies.

No Ogre was able to flee. They might have ran fast, but they couldn't outrun cavalrymen.

The entire Ogre tribe was wiped out. The commander died in battle, the Iron Ogre died in battle, and the Ogre Mage was taken prisoner.

As for the human side, there were quite a bit of casualties. But considering that they were facing an Ogre army led by two Legend Ogres, Marvin leading them to victory was already pretty good.

Bamboo and Daniela's battle had ended a while ago. As a Chosen of the Azure Matriarch, she had a good grasp of her surroundings.

As soon as Ivan knocked out the Iron Ogre, she began to retreat.

Unfortunately, Daniela kept chasing after her, unwilling to let her go. Bamboo ended up using quite a bit of strength but managed to escape from the battlefield.

This made the future Ice Empress very annoyed. Even if she wasn't willing to admit it, she knew deep down that Bamboo had fled not because of her, but because of Ivan and the other two powerful Legends!

What aggravated her bad mood was that just Constantine was already enough to restrict her. There was actually two even more powerful Legends appearing at Marvin's side.

Who is that guy in the end? How could he get help from these kinds of powerful experts?

Daniela's heart was full of doubt, but naturally, no one explained to her.

On the chaotic battlefield, everyone began to cleanly sweep up the spoils of war and take care of their companions' corpses.

There would be many matters that needed to be taken care of.

But Marvin didn't have to worry about dealing with these matters.

He sent four Dark Knights to Anna. He would let her be in charge of dealing with the aftermath of this war.

As for him, he was in a tent in the temporary camp.

There, a totally new kind of interrogation was about to start.

...

Only Marvin and O'Brien were in the tent.

After the war ended, Ivan urgently crossed the mountain and hurried to the camp established by the sailors.

Since he came to help Marvin, there was a temporary lack of power over there.

Without the Legend, who knew what the 3rd rank Roberts might do.

And Constantine was still being a very "friendly" local guide for Daniela, not giving any chance for her to search the castle.

Thus, it was only Marvin and O'Brien there.

The means of this Night Walker leader were heaven-defying. Marvin had never seen such a magical method before.

A transparent crystal ball was lying on the table.

A miniature version of the Ogre Mage was surprisingly locked in the crystal ball.

"It's fine," O'Brien gently said, "His mana is sealed."

"It's like a pet in a crystal ball. You can try to touch it."

Marvin forced a smile.

He couldn't be as fierce as O'Brien.

Perhaps only a few people could consider a Legend Ogre Mage in a crystal ball as a pet and play with it.

"I need to ask him a few questions," Marvin requested.

"Sure," replied O'Brien candidly.

He grabbed the crystal ball, and a mysterious black force passed through his palm and entered the Ogre Mage in the crystal ball.

The latter immediately displayed a painful expression.

"This is one of the masterpieces of the Anzed. The Cursed Globe. There aren't many in Feinan." O'Brien indifferently added, "Of course, there aren't many creatures worth using the Cursed Globe on."

"If you have questions you can ask him, there are no questions he won't answer. Moreover, he will say the truth."

After saying this, he turned and left the tent. "Remember to bring me back my pet when you are done asking. Thanks."

In an instant, only Marvin was left in the tent.

Marvin looked at the startled Ogre in the crystal ball and asked his first question. "Who taught you magic? I don't believe you innately comprehended it."

...

Marvin soon realized the Cursed Globe's extreme might.

Sure enough, the Ogre Mage said everything he knew under Marvin's questioning. He apparently couldn't control his own mouth.

O'Brien added a [True Words] enchantment on the Cursed Globe. Thus, when the Ogre Mage faced Marvin's questions he could only tell the truth.

Half an hour later, Marvin returned the Cursed Globe to O'Brien with a heavy expression.

He got too much information from the Legend Ogre.

He needed to carefully sort it out.

First, this Ogre Mage didn't become a Legend Ogre Mage by chance; he was actually deliberately fostered.

That black-clothed old man called himself the incarnation of an Archdevil, a Lord of Hell. Early on, when the Ogre tribe was struggling in the Shrieking mountain range, he appeared in front of the Ogre Mage.

He was the one who helped him advance to Legend.

And the Iron Ogre also advanced to Legend thanks to some special methods of the Archdevil's incarnation.

Because of this, they offended the most powerful monster in the Shrieking Mountain Range.

Despite these monsters being restrained by Lance's law and being unable to kill outside the mountain, they could still kill each other. The shackles didn't restrain that.

In order to avoid that powerful monster, the Archdevil's incarnation told them a way to overcome the shackles and take refuge out of that mountain.

Thus, the Ogre tribe left the Shrieking Mountain Range.

In other words, that Ogre tribe was also part of that black-clothed old man's scheme.

Otherwise, Marvin would have been able to expand White River Valley's domain to the coastline without needed to fight this war.

'Everything, from Twin Snakes Cult's Miller, Cold Water City's Toshiroya, up to the Gnolls and the Ogres was part of that black-clothed old man's scheme.'

'What the hell is he doing?' Marvin was seriously worrying.

If an Archdevil truly had his sight on White River Valley's treasure, that wouldn't be something he could resist alone.

But what made Marvin puzzled was, if that was truly the case, why was that Archdevil using such roundabout methods?

Couldn't he just drop by and take it?

Marvin then somewhat recalled that when they met, that guy's strength seemed to be sealed by a greater power.

'Not good, I have to quickly uncover the secret of the treasure.' Marvin made up his mind.

...

After the heated war, White River Valley seemed even more bustling.

Marvin dispatched people to establish a sentry tower on top of the Ogres' mountain. This was a pretty good location to watch both White River Valley and the future harbor in the east.

He then returned to his castle and went to his study.

He hesitated for a bit, and then clenched his teeth before ordering a servant to seek Daniela.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 212: Grandfather's Painting

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

In the study, Marvin and Daniela were sitting, facing each other.

"Oh, did Sir Constantine request a vacation? And you didn't feel relieved so you took the initiative to accompany me?" Daniela looked at Marvin and ruthlessly mocked.

She was a bit annoyed by Constantine always being around her these days.

She had come to White River Valley with a mission. Apart from confirming Marvin's blood, the most important task was to bring back the treasure.

She once pledged in front of her father that if she couldn't bring back that treasure, she would never come back to the North.

This was a pretty heavy oath.

Marvin also knew a bit about this. White River Valley wasn't famous during the game, but the Ice Empress did become the ruler of the North. This meant she was probably able to find the treasure.

Unfortunately, the current White River Valley was a lot different from the game's.

There were now three Legends watching over it. Perhaps no one would believe that a few months earlier, it was occupied by a pack of Gnolls.

And that's not mentioning the Ashes Tower's Master allying herself with White River Valley.

Elven Prince, Demon Hunter, and also an overpowered character that could play with a Legend Ogre Mage as a pet...

Daniela felt her own worldview being overturned.

Where did so many Legends come out from? In normal circumstances, this was the kind of expert that ordinary people wouldn't be able to meet for a lifetime.

But Marvin could actually gather this kind of power.

She was less and less able to see through that guy.

Thus, she was a bit surprised when Marvin sought her out today.

After all, even though the war ended, there was a lot of mess waiting for Marvin to clean up.

...

"I want to chat with you."

"Chat about the treasure matter."

Marvin got right to the point.

He obtained a lot of information from the Ogre Mage's mouth. In fact, meeting the Ogre tribe out of the Shrieking Mountain Range made him somewhat worried, but fortunately, he confirmed that Wizard God Lance's shackles had yet to collapse. That Archdevil also used a very special method to let the Ogres leave the Shrieking Mountain Range, and it couldn't be copied.

This had made him sigh in relief. Otherwise the monsters on the Shrieking Mountain Range could have freely come down. Not to mention a small White River Valley, perhaps even Jewel Bay, the entire East Coast and probably the whole South would have been overrun.

On the Shrieking Mountain Range were elite monsters, some species from ancient times, remnants of the Celestial Plane, and according to rumors, even many gods' spawns... In any case, before Marvin transmigrated, he had only run the Spider Crypt instance. As for the things above, he only heard rumors.

In short, it was very frightening.

Fortunately the Law Shackles were still there, intangible, but possessing an extremely strong restraint to those monsters. It's rumored that Lance used the purest Law power to create those Law Shackles and even the collapse of the Universe Magic Pool didn't influence the effect of the Law Shackles.

...

"What do you want to know." Daniela was silent for a moment before finally starting to chat with Marvin.

"I want to know, what is the treasure you are talking about?" Marvin asked.

"No comment," Daniela answered.

"It's related to a Devil," Marvin said.

Daniela indifferently retorted, "So what? We are descendants of the Numen. Who doesn't know that Numen come from the Devils."

"Our clan's most valuable treasure being related to the Numen is quite normal."

Marvin nodded. "However, being related to a powerhouse like an Archdevil, it isn't very normal."

Archdevils were equivalent to the Abyss' Demon Overlords. Who knew how many times stronger than the common gods they were!

This kind of existence was actually conspiring against White River Valley. Even if it was in line with the way Devils handled stuff, wasn't it a bit too exaggerated?

This was what made Marvin so confused.

Daniela sighed and hesitation began to flicker in her eyes. "You seem to already understand quite a few things."

"Indeed. This thing is really connected to an Archdevil. I know what you said before was just a perfunctory excuse. You definitely know where the treasure is," Daniela said.

"Listen, Marvin, If I really had such evil intentions, I wouldn't have fought off Bamboo for you, and I also wouldn't sit with you to negotiate."

Daniela's tone suddenly felt very sincere. "Trust me, that thing isn't something you can control. But our clan's people know how to control him."

"Otherwise, things might become very dangerous."

"We are family... Dear Cousin..."

Cousin?

Marvin sneered, Daniela was worthy of being the future Ice Empress, able to switch her attitude so easily.

Her unruly and willful nature was concealed very well as she began to display the affection of a family member.

Marvin was indifferent.

"Whether we are family or not, this is hard to say. But I am actually quite interested in the word you used, [Him]."

Marvin faintly smiled, continuing, "When we spoke of the treasure, you used [Him] and didn't refer to him with the usual [That thing] or [That treasure]. Could the treasure be something living?"

Daniela clenched her fist, realizing she had been careless and leaked something.



"You are truly unreasonable." Her expression immediately turned back to coldness.  
"You really think these few Legends can protect you for a lifetime?"

"Don't think I'm unaware that they could leave at any time. How could Legend powerhouses be willing to work for a 3rd rank weakling?"

Marvin shrugged. "They don't work for me, they are my friends."

"Friends?" Daniela indifferently dismissed, "They'll be your friends only when you are of use to them, right?"

"There is no harm in telling you the truth, the treasure left behind by our family is really something living... A part of one."

"I know that even if I tell you this, you wouldn't hand me the treasure. I can see with a glance that you are someone selfish. You only plan on hogging this treasure to yourself."

"But I warn you, you won't be able to control this kind of formidable power!"

"You won't only kill yourself, you'll kill the people at your side and even the entire White River Valley would fall into an unprecedented crisis because of your selfish action."  
Daniela's voice was strict.

Marvin shook his head and smiled. "You are wrong."

"I'll show you."

After saying that, he got up and took out a key from the drawer, pushed the cupboard behind him, and revealed the hidden door.

Marvin turned to Daniela and said, "Actually, this isn't the first time I opened this hidden door."

"The first time I opened it, I almost lost my life."

A heated gaze appeared on Daniela's face, "It won't this time. I'll protect you."

She then took a step forward and grabbed Marvin's left hand.

A refreshing feeling came from her body, and Marvin felt a bit more clear-headed.

"As expected, you know what is inside." Marvin took a deep glance at Daniela.

The latter slightly smiled. "This is something from our clan."

"Open it."

Marvin reached forward and opened the door!

They directly met with the Three Eyed Great Devil Head carrying that strange smile!

After opening the entrance, the two simultaneously shook!

Even Daniela was stopped by the willpower check for a moment. She struggled free three seconds later.

Her eyes returned from chaos to calm.

The entire study immediately became ice cold.

A layer of cold even formed on the hand she was holding.

Marvin couldn't help but sneeze!

"Is this how you'll protect me?"

After struggling free from the illusion, he looked at Daniela, the fear from the willpower check still apparent on his face.

His left hand was quickly freezing, at a rate visible with the naked eye.

After turning into the Ice Angel Shape, Daniela was extremely beautiful, far more beautiful than those local beauties. She also carried a kind of out of this world bearing.

She gently released his hand and her wings began flapping, suddenly rushing inside!

Marvin calmly followed behind her.

The hidden room wasn't too big and the sides were completely deserted.

"This is fake." Daniela took a glance at that Great Devil Head.

"This is merely an alchemy item. It's used to send the same chaos willpower spell as the Great Devil."

She looked further into the hidden room.

There was a scroll painting in the depths of the room. On the scroll was a relatively young man.

The painting looked ordinary, with nothing special about it.

But the young man's eyes were looking at a stone platform.

On the stone platform lay a pair of silver bracelets.

"It is!"

Daniela was pleasantly surprised. She flew there, trying to grab that pair of bracelets.

But at that time, the young man in the scroll painting lifted his head and said, "You aren't my descendant. You aren't qualified to take away my inheritance."

Daniela looked at that man in the painting with disbelief and the next second, a frightening light ray shot out from the painting.

Even in her Ice Angel Shape, she couldn't dodge.

Marvin saw Daniela get hit by the light ray and turn into a petrified Ice Angel, falling on the ground extremely awkwardly.

He had already been expecting something like this.

He knew about the set of rules guarding the treasure. When his grandfather left, he had set it up so that only his direct descendants could obtain this treasure.

Even if Daniela was his cousin, she clearly didn't have the qualifications to take away this pair of bracelets.

Marvin quickly arrived in front of the stone platform.

"Equip them quickly," the young man on the painting urged, "My petrification can only block her for at most three minutes."

"I have a lot of things to tell you during those three minutes."

Marvin didn't hesitate and directly equipped the silver bracelets.

Then, a silvery light flashed and the bracelets became invisible. He tried to feel them, and sure enough, the bracelets were still there. But other people wouldn't be able to perceive them.

He raised his head and looked at the man in the scroll painting and couldn't help but ask, "In the end, what did you leave behind for me?"

"Dear Grandfather?"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## Chapter 213: Ancestor's Mystery

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"Being called grandfather by a young man not much smaller than me is truly a strange experience."

The young man in the painting blinked. "What's your name? Are you Jean or Miller's child?"

"I'm Marvin. My father is Jean," Marvin answered simply.

"Are they okay?" The man in the painting anxiously fretted, "After I left, I didn't pay attention to White River Valley for a very long time. I gave the valley to your father, but his innate talent isn't very outstanding. I always worried about you guys."

"After you left?" Marvin was shocked.

"Could it be that you haven't died?"

The young man laughed for a bit. "Of course, it's just a prank. But it seems I won't be able to return for a little while. To let everyone think I'm dead might have been for the best."

Marvin suddenly felt a bit dizzy.

His own grandfather... Was actually still alive?

He firmly believed that this scroll was an alchemy item with a [Message Image] enchantment attached to it. The man inside and his words would have been recorded in advance.

But he hadn't expected that his own grandfather was actually still alive.

That painting....

"This painting will burn in a few minutes. You might not see me for a very long time, Marvin."

A trace of benevolence flashed through the young man's eyes as he watched Marvin. Despite Marvin feeling that kindness was a bit out of sorts, he still forced himself to accept it.

He was his grandfather after all.

"Communication across planes is a very troublesome matter unless you can find someone able to reproduce a similar item."

The young man gravely said, "We don't have much time. I know you have a lot of questions, but I have to answer to the most important ones."

Then, the young man kept talking for two and a half minutes, and Marvin listened, recording every word in his heart.

The content was really too shocking.

Marvin kept thinking about it, confirming it in his heart, making sure his grandfather didn't make a mistake.

Once the time came, the lower half of the painting began to burn on its own.

"Seems like our discussion has reached its end." The young man gently smiled. "Although I'm surprised you didn't become a Wizard, but Ranger with the Shapeshift Sorcerer subclass is also a very fascinating path. I also noticed many powerful blessings on your body. You seem to be shouldering many people's expectations."

"I am proud of you."

"This painting will ultimately leave a remnant behind. That remnant is the plane's mark. If you can get a hold of an item to communicate between planes, you can try to get in touch with me. I know you still have many questions, but for now you can only go by yourself and gradually explore..."

That last word had yet to be finished when the painting finished burning.

Marvin cautiously walked over and picked out a small crystal from the ashes.

This was the plane mark his grandfather mentioned.

He suddenly heard a coughing voice behind him!

The powerful Ice Angel finally got rid of the petrification state.

She was extremely angry as she looked at the absolutely empty stone platform. She lost her self-control and asked Marvin, "What have you done?"

Marvin calmly looked at Daniela. "I took what my grandfather gave me."

"That's all."

Daniela rushed in disbelief and grabbed Marvin's wrists.

The ice cold feeling from her body could be felt.

"You really... equipped it?" Daniela's tone was extremely dispirited.

She ground her teeth and glared at Marvin, "Why is it you!"

"My father obviously told me it belonged to me!"

"It should be mine."

She then seemed lose her spirit.

Marvin lightly patted her shoulder. "Don't take offense, your father might have made a wrong guess."

"Regardless, we are family, aren't we?"

...

That pair of bracelets wasn't a treasure in itself, but only people with enough talent in the Cridland clan could put them on.

Their effect was to control the true treasure.

And after putting it on, Cridland's clansmen couldn't harm him. This was a bloodline restriction.

Marvin's grandfather also made use of that point in those days. He stole the treasure and ran away unhindered out of the Lavis Kingdom.

In the Cridland family, there was a rumor that the one who put on this pair of bracelets would become the ruler of the North.

Marvin's grandfather had put on those bracelets, but he wasn't interested in becoming the ruler of the North. A few decades after escaping to the South, he left this world.

That's right, he left this world, left Feinan.

But that didn't mean he died.

Marvin recalled that day in his childhood when his father and Uncle Miller held a funeral. They hadn't looked very sad.

They must have known their father had disappeared, but hadn't died.

He left this world. And as for where he was now, he hadn't had time to tell Marvin, but according to Marvin's guess... he most likely was in Hell.

The secret of the Numen, Cridland clan's most valuable treasure... Marvin finally knew what the hell that thing was!

That was the head of an Archdevil!

Despite his grandfather mentioning the countless ancient seals on it, Marvin was still startled.

The Archdevil head was still the real thing, and it was now calmly lying in that secret path.

Thinking of this, Marvin didn't even dare to sleep in his castle.

His grandfather truly had a big heart. He actually buried a ticking time bomb like that under White River Valley. Wasn't he worried that a time bomb like that, whose seals weren't reinforced by strong casters, could lead to many calamities?

In fact, the calamities White River Valley met this past half year were due to this sealed head.

That black-clothed old man was a phantom forcefully condensed by the Archdevil. It had countless years of knowledge from the Archdevil, but no strength.

This guy was also pitiful. His head was originally cut down by the first Numen, and they absorbed knowledge and bloodline's strength from the Archdevil's head. They successfully made the first man-made bloodline Sorcerer. Those people were the first Numen.

They were extremely powerful and tyrannized countless worlds, a group of crazy mad scientists. They were obsessed with making artificial bloodlines and loved to imprison all kinds of powerful lifeforms to absorb their power.

This Archdevil was one of the unlucky targets.

He had been used by the Cridland clan for many generations, relying on his unparalleled vitality and his ability to draw power from the void. He kept struggling at death's door.

A lot of seals were placed on his head, leaving him unable to use his considerable powers.

Helpless, he could only begin to resort to schemes, which also happened to be what he was the best at.

He tried countless times, and eventually succeeded.

He bewitched Marvin's grandfather into taking him away from the Cridland clan's hidden grounds.

But he had also failed. Marvin's grandfather was the most outstanding talent from the Cridland clan (or so the young man had said). Even if others believed he was merely a 3rd rank Wizard, in fact, his Sorcerer class was higher leveled than his Wizard class. Even if it wasn't publicly known, Marvin estimated that his grandfather was at least a Legend.

He saw through the Devil's trick and imprisoned it in a small region like White River Valley before relying on his mighty strength to replace the seals.

The Archdevil thoroughly calmed down.

But he didn't give up.

The two sides made a bet, and put it on a contract. That time, the always conceited young man lost and had to follow the contract, so he was forced to leave Feinan.

He thought he could come back very quickly, but he was trapped.

Thus, so many years flew past.

Up till today when Marvin, with the help of Daniela, realized the truth.

Because Marvin's grandfather left, the seals on the Archdevil's head began to loosen up.

Little by little, he was able to condense a phantom. And even if it was only a small step, it already gave him the prerequisite to help him escape.

He used the black-clothed man's identity to bewitch Toshiroya, King Cobra, Miller, and the Ogres. He hadn't dared to look for stronger people because they would have been able to see through him.

He was hoping these people could rescue him, though of course, he had enticed them with lies.

But Marvin arrived in this world, making everything impossible.

Marvin equipped that pair of bracelets named [Ancestor's Mystery]. The bracelets' power was reinvigorated, once again activating many seals that had previously worn off a for long time back on that Archdevil's head.



From his grandfather's words, the Archdevil's head shouldn't be able to recreate a phantom for another half a year.

Naturally, he also warned Marvin to not touch the head for the time being, unless he was able to go through the hidden chamber's willpower check on his own.

That Great Devil's head was an reproduction of the actual Archdevil's head made by his grandfather using alchemy. Only by using his own power to withstand its effects would he be able to resist the Archdevil's bewitchment.

Thus Marvin set aside the idea to go check on the Archdevil's head for the time being.

However, he apparently found a completely new path for his Shapeshift Sorcerer advancement.

In any case, Marvin finally figured out the origin of the black-clothed man, and temporarily removed the crisis on his territory.

As for Daniela, she was extremely dispirited. She had pledged that if she couldn't get the Archdevil's head, she wouldn't go back to the North.

She sent Oren back to Lavis' Dukedom to inform her father.

Marvin couldn't say anything about this.

He wasn't worried about Daniela staying in his territory. After all, with the Ancestor's Mystery in his hand, she wouldn't be foolish enough to get in contact with the Archdevil's head. She would only be controlled by that kind of crafty Devil.

But what Marvin didn't expect was that just one day later, he would be pleasantly surprised by Daniela.

...

The next day, in the meeting room.

Marvin gathered everyone, mainly to discuss what would happen after the war and how to develop White River Valley.

He shared a bit of his thoughts when suddenly, Daniela stood up.

"In any case, I have nothing else to do here."

"Building a country is something I've been learning since I was a child. If you trust me, as your fiancée, let me deal with this matter."

Everyone looked at each other in dismay, feeling doubtful of Daniela.

Marvin slightly hesitated.

"Tell me what you are thinking first."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 214: Territory Development

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Behind Marvin was a complete map of White River Valley.

The map was left behind by Marvin's grandfather and perfected by Marvin's father, but it hadn't been updated during this generation.

This map could at most be considered a sketch.

After all, the current White River Valley had already expanded at least twice.

From the northern mine to the southern White River, from the common border with River Shore City to the coastline.

Marvin made a decision. He would go look for two Master Cartographers to draw a map of White River Valley once this meeting ended.

But for now, he had to use this one.

Daniela didn't have stage fright, and really looked as if she was Marvin's fiancée.

She walked up to Marvin's seat and pointed at the coastline on the map. "You intend to establish a harbor there?"

Marvin nodded in reply. "Yes."

"It would be better to do it further south."

Her slender finger followed the coastline and surprisingly pointed at the estuary, the location where the White River flowed into the sea.

"This place is the most suitable to build a harbor, because it allows the sea trade to also develop inwards. As far as I know, the river is very deep."

"I looked at the river when I was bored a few days ago. The river is wide, very slow, and deep. Many ships could travel on it."

"If you set up a harbor there, and then restore the previously abandoned wharf, you could completely connect the eastern and western side of your territory." Daniela spoke with assurance.

Marvin nodded and said, "I also planned to do that at the beginning."

"However, that location doesn't work. It's not fitting to build a harbor there because of the erosion caused by the river. It would be very hard to build a city on that land. Moreover, that area is closer to the wilderness."

Daniela confidently said, "I'll take care of this issue."

"It's only soft soil. As long as you are fine with me taking care of it, you'll have a new harbor in six months!"

Everyone looked at Daniela doubtfully.

Only the alchemist who wanted to join in the fun suddenly spoke, "Steel talcum powder?"

Daniela looked at the alchemist, somewhat surprised. "Not bad, there is someone who knows of [Steel Talcum Powder] in such a rural area."

The corner of Marvin's mouth twitched.

These words were implying he didn't even know of steel talcum powder. But the price and buying channels of that stuff weren't things the current White River Valley could take care of, right?

But he carefully thought. What Daniela said wasn't without reason.

White River's estuary was a very important strategic location. If they could occupy this area, it would be extremely convenient for both sea trade and inland trade.

He thought for a bit and muttered, "What if I want you to build the harbor in three months?"

Daniela shrugged. "The budget would need to be doubled."

Marvin nodded. Daniela's appraising ability was very good. They would need a great amount of manpower to establish a new harbor, and it required a lot of money.

After the harbor was built, they still needed enough ships.

Marvin only had the stolen Southie for now. As soon as the war ended, Marvin sent a group of people to deal with this.

Most of those slaves chose to leave by themselves, while a few chose to stay behind. Marvin let them live in the eastern part of White River Valley, in the vicinity of the new harbor.

They might become the first residents of the new harbor. As for the Southie, it was silently unmoving on the beach and was undergoing remodeling.

River Shore City's engineers had already begun to carry out a complete transformation.

The remodeling would last about a month. Once the transformation finished, the Southie would be a completely new ship, at least on the exterior. Even if the Taurus chamber of commerce wanted to say something, they wouldn't be able to. Once they shed all pretenses with Marvin, he would simply denounce them for their secret slave trade.

Even though the South Wizard Alliance didn't prohibit slave trade on paper, it required a permit. It was clear that the Southie didn't have that kind of permit, so it could only pretend to be a merchant ship stealthily transporting slaves. In any case, Marvin wasn't the clueless teen from the past. White River Valley had also greatly developed. He wasn't worried about the Taurus chamber of commerce trying something.

...

Then, Marvin spontaneously sat on the side, letting Daniela become the lead of this meeting.

Every idea Marvin suggested was being perfected.

The northern mine would continue to operate. According to the notes left by Marvin's father, the northern mine not only had a deep iron ore vein, but might also have some other ore veins.

But they were restricted by the previously lacking economy of White River Valley, and they were short on miners.

Daniela suggested to purchase slaves to solve this issue. And to buy in great quantity.

"Building a territory requires manpower. A slave costs a fifth of a free man. Even though they have shorter life expectancy, it's far more beneficial than employing miners." Daniela calmly added, "I don't know much about the current market situation in the South, but this is how we handle it in the North."

"It's also very easy if you want to keep a benevolent reputation. Promise the slaves that if they work hard for three years, they would automatically become free men."

"Most people only need a bit of hope in order to work with all their might."

"This is different from when you released those slaves. The slaves on that ship were from the South, in addition, most of them were women and children. You promised them freedom. The slaves you need to buy should be young and sturdy men. There are frequent wars between northern cities, and many people would become prisoners of war after losing. I know the best place to purchase those slaves."

Daniela didn't get to finish her words when Marvin chimed in, "Bass Harbor."

Daniela praisingly nodded. "Seems like the Overlord isn't inexperienced."

Marvin sighed. As someone who went through the education of a more advanced civilization, he was very critical of slavery.

But under these circumstances, if they didn't use Daniela's methods, they really couldn't develop the territory quickly.

He wasn't a saint, and it was impossible to help everyone. Just as Daniela said, he really needed a group of young, sturdy, and obedient slaves.

...

After talking about the northern mine and the new harbor, Daniela's sight aimed to the south.

Even though she had only stayed in White River Valley for a short period of time, she figured out the entire territory's situation.

To the south of White River Valley was a very fertile piece of land, but there were many monsters that would harass the inhabitants.

With the just the guards' manpower, they wouldn't be able to completely clean up these monsters.

But Daniela suggested another way.

Establishing an [Adventurer Camp].

Set up an adventurer camp west of the southern White River.

Building a small kind of village there would provide the adventurers with a resting place, supplies, and weapons repairs...

Marvin had already been mulling over it for a long time. However, for Daniela to be able to suggest the idea in such a short time, he had to say, the future Ice Empress truly had the ability to rule a country.

As for how they should build the facilities for the adventurers, Marvin already had a plan.

The plan was very simple: Request help from River Shore City.

In any case, his deal with Madeline was still ongoing, Marvin could give any request and she could only answer by grinding her teeth.

If he didn't profit as much as he could now, could he wait till she advanced to Legend to ask?

...

According to Daniela's plan, once the adventurer camp was set up, it would help settle the adventurers who came attracted by the wilderness clearing order.

They could start exploring to the south. That place was part of the wilderness, but if there were enough people, they would gradually secure the area.

Marvin could issue a few monster extermination quests. The bounty hunters would rush there like ants rushing for food.

Moreover, White River Valley had many cost-effective monsters to kill, so getting rid of them would give easy money to the adventurers.

This would become the paradise of the southern adventurers.

...

Apart from this, recruiting sentries and mounted patrols was also put on the agenda by Daniela.

Because in her plan, such a vast territory had to establish enough defense mechanisms. Otherwise, it would be too easy for the enemies to infiltrate it.

"There, there, and also there. This one is the most important... We must set up a sentry tower there."

The place Daniela was pointing at was unsurprisingly the top of the Ogres' mountain.

As she said, that location was extremely advantageous, able to overlook the entire White River Valley. It had views on the Spider Crypt in the north, and the future

adventurer camp in the south, River Shore City in the west, and the new port in the east.

This location definitely needed a lookout post working around the clock.

As for the few other places Daniela pointed, they were also key locations.

Marvin's expression while looking at Daniela was a lot more appreciative.

Even if that girl was young, her insight in planning was very frightening.

"Do you believe me now?" She winked, looking at Marvin. "I'm a woman who started drawing architectural designs when I was four."

Marvin clapped, "Good. You perfected the entire plan."

At that time, the others couldn't stay seated.

They looked at Marvin and Daniela for a long time. Ultimately, Anna and Wayne couldn't help but ask, "Brother/Young Master Marvin, you planned so many things, but... What about money?"

Marvin and Daniela glanced at each other and answered at the same time, "Borrow!"

Borrowing money, crazily borrowing money. This was the main reason Marvin wanted to attack the Ogre mountain.

With this gold mine in his possession, he could start borrowing money everywhere.

...

In the Wizard Tower outside River Shore City.

Madeline's complexion became ashen as she looked at the list Marvin sent her.

A huge amount of supplies and manpower was requested.

'What the hell, there is even something like a dozen prostitutes required as manpower!'

What angered her even more were the 2000 Wizard golds written at the end of the list.

'Do you really want to squeeze me dry?' Madeline angrily grasp the list.

But the next line made her feel a bit better.

'So it's borrowed... Half a year?'

She hesitated, before agreeing to Marvin's request.

The same thing happened in the South Wizard Alliance's headquarters.

But this loan request had shockingly reached 10000 Wizard golds!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 215: Setting Off Once Again

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

South Wizard Alliance's East Coast headquarters. Department of Finance conference room.

"Regarding Baron Marvin's application for a huge loan, what does everyone think?" inquired one person in a low voice.

The other four stayed silent.

After a moment, someone sneered, "10000 Wizard gold coins? Never before has such a huge amount been loaned since the alliance was established, right?"

"What did he use as a guarantee?"

The first person who spoke was a woman. She was the head of the finance department, O'Connor.

She took a glance at that sneering man and said, "Mister Peter, could you not speak nonsense if you haven't checked the assessment report?"

Peter felt speechless.

Everyone had a thin document in front of them.

This was an assessment report of Marvin and White River Valley's development potential.

The South Wizard Alliance was very strict when providing a loan, and would always do a thorough investigation.

"As far as I know, Baron Marvin's territory truly doesn't have enough to repay the loan on a short term basis. But in this expedition, Baron Marvin successfully opened up a territory."



"He annihilated an entire Ogre tribe. It is said that there were Legend Ogres among them."

"And we discovered quite a few old acquaintances at Baron Marvin's side."

O'Connor just finished her sentence when Peter suddenly shouted, startled, "How could this be!"

As he held that information in front of him and looked at each familiar name, he couldn't help but blurt out, "Demon Hunter Constantine..."

"Elven War Saint Ivan..."

"And even that unsociable O'Brien?"

Peter gulped in agitation. "Tell me, is this information forged?"

The others looked at him as if he was an idiot.

The reason they were silent earlier was because they were shocked by those few names. They were wondering what kind of person could gather so many powerhouses in one place.

Not to mention the information, a few pages earlier, it also mentioned that Marvin, along with a few other Legend Powerhouses, got rid of the Crimson Patriarch, something which even Sir Anthony wasn't able to do.

There was no doubt that simply from this report, Baron Marvin was someone with extremely high potential for growth.

The South Wizard Alliance already intended to confer Marvin a title of Viscount after the success of this wilderness clearing expedition. The corresponding rewards were also being prepared.

The South Wizard Alliance was always encouraging capable nobles to expand their lands, but not like those northern nobles who liked to fight against each other to the death for a bit of resources. Those people would rather start a feud that would last for generations than step out in the wilderness.

But what caught the alliance somewhat unprepared was that they had yet to send Marvin's reward and this guy already asked for a loan.

And the loan amount was unprecedentedly high!

10000 Wizard golds!

This was equivalent to ten million silvers!

This amount was equivalent to half of the loan quota of the department of finance in the South Wizard Alliance's eastern headquarters.

If they loaned that money to Marvin and the other territories asked to borrow from them, they might end up in a situation where they were strapped for cash.

From this point of view, Marvin's request was a bit absurd.

But directly declining wasn't a good way to handle it.

Because something very tempting was written on Marvin's loan application.

10000 Wizard golds, six month return deadline. Collateral, two gold mines.

Immediately after the end of the wilderness clearing military campaign, Marvin promptly looked for someone to check the ore vein at the core of the Ogres' mountain.

The outcome made him overjoyed.

According to his father, there was a gold mine there. But that wasn't the result of the investigation. There wasn't just one vein, there were two!

The two ore veins ran parallel to each other and didn't cross paths, one south and one north. Marvin gave mining rights for one to the Silver Church as part of their business transaction, but he was still the owner of the gold mine.

According to the investigation, if they mined with a certain intensity, it would take about twenty years to fully mine.

Their entire value when added together exceeded 60000 Wizard golds.

It was the appearance of those two golds mines that made things difficult for the finance department.

The head of the department, O'Connor, already sent a group of people to check, and there was no issue with Marvin's report. No one expected such a hidden treasure to lie in the vicinity of a barbarous place like the Shrieking Mountain Range. But it was too late to act, because that mountain along with the coastline already became the personal property of Marvin.

Moreover, the wilderness clearing order was still in effect. As long as he kept opening up new territory for the next half a year, the wilderness clearing order would remain valid.

Who knew what this ambitious young man would do.

In the eyes of the higher ups of the Alliance, Marvin was a very promising Overlord worth nurturing.

And his ability to repay the debt in the long term was very high. There was apparently no risk in lending this money.

But the amount was too large, so the finance department had to convene this meeting.

..

"Ladies and Gentlemen, everyone must have already grasped the information about White River Valley." O'Connor looked at everyone and resolutely announced, "Now is the time to vote."

"Oh, that's right. If anyone is worried about the guarantee, there was a piece of information an hour ago, Dame Hathaway of the Three Ring Towers is willing to vouch for this debt. But it was in a hurry, so there wasn't time to formally send the vouching document. But Dame Hathaway's reputation is flawless."

O'Connor finished and then took the lead. "I agree to provide this loan."

"I agree."

"I agree."

Even Peter who was initially sneering shrugged. "I agree."

Only the last man was silent for a moment before sighing, "I abstain from voting."

The all gave him a pitying look.

This was a Unicorn clansman. They had heard about the small grudges between the Unicorn clan and Marvin.

It was said that the Unicorn clan was intending to deal with Marvin, but they ended up suffering from the disaster known as the Ancient Red Dragon Ell.

The Unicorn clan had already collapsed. As one of the few remaining clansman, even if this person had a high position in the South Wizard Alliance, he couldn't create much trouble for Marvin.

4 to 0, perfect pass.

Half an hour later, Bass Harbor, in the lobby of the South Wizard Alliance's eastern headquarters.

"Congratulations, Miss Anna, Lord Marvin's application has already been approved."

O'Connor personally handed a document to Anna and then looked behind them. "As long as Baron Marvin shows his Baron Medal, he can sign it."

Anna took out a medal and smiled. "He didn't come, but I brought the medal. Is that a problem?"

O'Connor froze. Such an important matter was actually handled by a butler?

She couldn't help but ask, "Where is Baron Marvin now?"

"He..." Anna signed while helplessly saying, "I also don't know..."

Lola behind her back also nodded. "Lord Marvin is indeed known as the Wanderer. After giving us quite a bit of tasks, he slipped away."

...

Indeed, just as Lola said, after Marvin completed the planning of the development of his territory, and gave everyone long term and short term tasks, he once again left his territory.

He was going west this time. He didn't bring anyone along apart from Isabelle.

Acting as an overlord wasn't his strong point. He would at most know a bit of basic management general knowledge, and only had a rough idea on how to quickly build a powerful territory.

It turned out that Daniela displayed breathtaking talent in this regard.

Marvin felt quite at ease in leaving the territory development to Daniela. Of course, during Marvin's absence, the Proxy Overlord was still Wayne.

And the matter of River Shore City's loan was very simple, just send a sealed letter and Madeline would send the stuff.

The 6th page of the Book of Nalu was still in her hands after all, and she was still in the middle of enlightenment.

Before she advanced, Hathaway could come and take back that page any time, thus she didn't dare to go against Marvin.

And as for the South Wizard Alliance's loan, he carefully considered and still sent Anna.

This was a huge amount of money. He wouldn't trust the others with it. He only felt relieved with the butler who had always silently followed behind his back all this time.

As for Lola, he sent her to buy supplies and slaves.

He already officially appointed Lola as White River Valley's Finance official. She was mainly in charge of purchasing and budgeting. The true financial power was still in the hands of Anna.

Daniela was mainly in charge of building the territory. She wasn't meddling with the other matters.

But her existence was also considered as an insurance after Marvin left.

Even though the Dark Guards were always there to defend White River Valley, but if they met a powerhouse, they wouldn't be able to contend against it.

Constantine and O'Brien had left White River Valley after all. The former because of the Red Dragon's corpse. Apparently there was no one in the South who knew how to properly dismember a Dragon. In order to maximize the profits, Constantine intended to personally set out to look for an old acquaintance. That guy reportedly had dissected at least three Dragons! He had plenty of experience.

Fortunately the Red Dragon's corpse in the Thousand Paper Crane wouldn't have any issue. As for the matter of the Dragon Blood's bath, Marvin once asked Constantine and was scolded by the latter for wanting to recklessly waste such a resource.

Dragon blood could make very powerful medicine. Using it to bathe would certainly increase one's attributes, but it wasn't very cost efficient.

After Marvin understood, he decided to wait for that butcher's arrival while also asking Constantine to help with recruiting a few master-level Potioneers.

Apart from this, Ivan followed Anna and Lola to Bass Harbor in the north in order to guarantee the safety of the funds.

And the rest of the territory's progress was carefully arranged.

...

Three days later, Marvin brought along Isabelle and climbed over the the mountain on the far west of the Deathly Silent Hills, northwest of River Shore City.

What spread in front of them was an endless desert.

The Saint Desert.

Marvin let out a breath and took the lead under the setting sun.

"Let's go, we have a long road ahead of us."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 216: White Deer in the Desert

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

A tall silhouette and a small silhouette were struggling forward in an endless sandy area.

There was a lot of wind and their feet would sink in the sand with each step, greatly impeding their progress.

Especially the little girl in the back. Her face had a few bloody scratches from the flying sand, but they had already dried up.

It could be seen that she struggled with every single step.

But she was still resolutely following behind Marvin, expressionless.

From her words, she wouldn't hesitate to do anything Marvin asked her to do.

And Marvin didn't lend her a helping hand.

He could see a shadow of his former friend from this girl with 18 years left to live. The path ahead would be full of hardship, difficult even for Marvin.

But she was confident in him. The way she was looking at him made Marvin feel responsible for her.

He had to think of a way to save her.

Thus, when he left White River Valley this time, he didn't bring anyone else, only Isabelle!

Marvin planned a path full of hardship for her.

That path was far more difficult than this desert, but it was her only chance.

'I hope this child can persevere.'

Marvin turned and took a glance at Isabelle. She clearly was running out of strength, but she still listened to Marvin's words: To not use [Blink].

This ability would endlessly burn her already short remaining lifespan. Marvin ordered her to not use it except as a last resort.

She was struggling at every step.

This seemed to be the fate of the Hammons.

Marvin stopped and waited for a while before Isabelle slowly caught up.

In fact, they were already three days away from the Deathly Silent Hills.

Marvin had a compass in hand, making sure they wouldn't go in the wrong direction.

"There is about an hour of walking left. How are you?" he asked with concern.

Isabelle softly nodded.

The two continued forward.

An hour and twenty minutes later, there seemed to be less sandy winds.

The two climbed a dune. They could faintly see some signs of human habitation in the distance.

The girl rubbed her eyes, thinking it was a mirage.

Marvin gently patted her head, spitting some sand that had gotten into his mouth. "It's here."

This was an oasis. The most famous town of the eastern part of the Saint Desert, [Kassemuir], was founded on this oasis.

The desert people believed that this was a land blessed by gods because many oases in the desert faded away with the passage of time, but only this Kassemuir oasis didn't.

It had stood straight for an era.

Most of the Saint Desert was occupied by the Bai clan. As for the Sha clan, they were only a small part occupying the stone forest in the north, studying their gunpowder and firearms.

"In the language of the Bai clansmen, Kassemuir means 'Pearl'."

"This is the place I said I would bring you to."

Marvin held Isabelle's hand and walked to the oasis.

The town could slowly be seen in the distance.

This town wasn't unfamiliar to Marvin. He had hung around and gotten pretty high reputation there due to some coincidence, nearly becoming the Bai Clan head.

As for Kassemuir, he knew quite a bit.

This town wasn't as calm as it looked.

There were hidden undercurrents that other people couldn't see. These frightening shadows should still be dormant at this time. If they appeared, they might frighten the entire Saint Desert.

But the reason Marvin came wasn't to settle a hidden danger in Kassemuir.

In fact, he had left White River Valley with one goal: Grabbing the Source of Fire's Order.

Only with that Source of Fire's Order could they resist the waves of chaos magic during the Great Calamity and establish an area that temporarily wouldn't be subject to the influence of chaos magic.

That was the reason the Rocky Mountain could found a country at that time. The three Fate Sisters had a Source of Fire's Order in hand.

They lit the order, to bless the people.

Even if Marvin didn't know where they got that Source of Fire's Order, he knew they actually had three of them.

The first one was stolen by Shadow Prince Glynos. The second was forcefully extinguished by many gods joining hands when the sisters lit it.

As for the third, the eldest of the sisters, that fierce girl who personally tore apart the Black Dragon, eliminated a few gods' avatars and burnt the order.

Despite this, they suffered from the gods jealousy toward the Rocky Mountain and thus, it didn't last for long.

Marvin required the Source of Fire's Order. He knew the gods' tricks, so he only needed one.



But getting more would naturally be even better.

Thus, he left White River Valley this time to go for the Sorcerer country, Rocky Mountain!

As for the Saint Desert, they were only passing through.

Kassemuir was a hub. If not for Isabelle, Marvin wouldn't need to come here.

But what made Marvin frown was that it was apparently the wrong time to get there.

When they finally arrived at the town, they found out that it was under martial law!

People without IDs wouldn't be able to enter Kassemuir. They might even be captured as spies by the guards.

'What happened?'

Marvin curiously looked at a huge group of people gathered around a signboard outside Kassemuir.

He pulled Isabelle's hands and moved closer.

...

In the barren endless desert.

A few slanted cactuses were lying on the roadside.

A hungry and thirsty traveller was on the roadside, apparently having lost his way.

His lips were split open, probably from dehydration. Without help, he might not survive this crisis.

Suddenly, a nimble White Deer appeared in his sight.

A White Deer appearing in the desert?

If an average person saw it, they might only think it was a mirage.

But this traveler seemed strangely attracted and staggered up.

The White Deer stayed in place, unmoving.

The man slowly approached.

The White Deer simply kept standing there, its eyes full of kindness.

But at that time, the traveler suddenly showed his sinister fangs. His face caved in, turning into a circle of frightening sharp teeth!

The White Deer was immediately startled!

But it was too late. The traveler had already pounced on it and bitten the White Deer's neck.

The latter fell on the ground, struggling for a moment before being sucked dry by the traveler, meeting a tragic death in the desert.

The traveler chuckled and wiped the bloodstains, returning to the appearance of a normal man.

At that time, a white clothed woman suddenly appeared.

"Good job."

"Keep killing White Deer. But pay attention to Kassemuir's side. Someone already took note of our operation."

"We have to be careful of the retribution of the Bai," the woman briefly warned in a soft voice.

The traveler chuckled disapprovingly. "Rest assured, Lady Deceiver."

"Those silly Bais still can't differentiate humans from Evil Spirits.."

The white clothed woman nodded. "That's fine."

"According to my investigation, it's rumored that only by killing a certain amount of White Deer would one be able to attract the [White Deer Holy Spirit]'s anger."

"This is the only opportunity to open the White Deer's cave. Only by grabbing the treasure inside we will be able to set up the Disaster Door."

"Keep going, but remember to not let the Bai worshippers find out about you. Otherwise the White Deer Holy Spirit won't leave the White Deer Cave. Understood?"

The traveler nodded.

Then a sandy wind blew across and the woman disappeared.

The traveler kept going forward.

And that poor White Deer was already buried in the sand.

...

In front of the bulletin board, Marvin was seriously looking at the contents.

Unlike the other people who came attracted by their curiosity, he actually understood the meaning behind this announcement.

'Large scale White Deer killings?'

'No wonder the Bais want to seal off Kassemuir.'

'The White Deer Holy Spirit is the sacred beast of the Bai clansmen.'

Information about those White Deers appeared in Marvin's mind.

It's rumored that when the Bai ancestors were forced to migrate to this desert, they couldn't adapt to the life there. They could find neither water nor a place to survive.

At that time, the White Deer Holy Spirit appeared, showing them the path, and ultimately leading them to an oasis.

The White Deer Holy Spirit was the Bai clan's deity.

It had many heirs, and these mysterious White Deer had the ability to be invisible. They were scattered all over the desert.

They normally couldn't be seen.

Occasionally, when travelers who lost their way, tumbling on the roadside, were in crisis, the White Deer would appear to them.

At that time, as long as they followed behind it, they could find a water source and keep on living.

Similar legends existed in various parts of the Saint Desert.

These White Deers were under the protection of the Bai clan and they were travelers' benefactors.

But now, the angry Bai clansmen found out a great amount of White Deer corpses.

Someone was killing the White Deer.

This made the Bai clansmen unable to restrain their anger. They sealed off all the oases and began to investigate this matter.

Seeing the contents of this bulletin board, other might just wonder why someone was killing White Deers, but Marvin knew it was a serious matter.

'A White Deer bloodbath, only to draw out the White Deer Holy Spirit. Only then would the White Deer Cave from the rumors would be shortly opened.'

'That artifact can establish a passage between planes... Whose plan is it?'

A large amount of names appeared in Marvin's mind.

A similar event also happened in his previous life. But Marvin didn't know whose work it was.

After all, there were a few planes relatively close to Feinan that could open a temporary passage.

Underworld, Abyss, Hell... They were all possible choices.

Putting this conspiracy behind, Marvin was now facing a serious problem.

If he couldn't get into Kassemuir, he wouldn't be able to implement his plan.

This made him feel quite troubled.

But at that time, a group of people suddenly proclaimed, "The Holy Maiden returned!"

"She went to investigate the circumstances of the White Deer's murder. There must have been results since she came back."

Marvin turned his head, only to see a white-clothed woman slowly walking back from the desert.

He had a kind of special feeling when he saw her.

This feeling was very similar to when he looked at Daniela.

---

T/N: The Bai of the Bai clan means white. It is the same character as the white from the white deer. Knowledge +1!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## Read Night Ranger - Chapter 217: Assassin Alliance

Chapter 217: Assassin Alliance

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The Holy Maiden walked over from the desert, two Bai clansmen silently following behind her.

Scimitar Fighters.

The scimitar skills of the Bai clansmen were known throughout the entire continent. Scimitar Fighter was also one of the defining classes of the Bai clansmen, just like the Sha's Battle Gunner.

The two Scimitar Fighters were each holding someone.

They seemed to be prisoners.

They looked sturdy, but they were now covered with cuts and bruises and their mouths were sealed with rubber tape.

The Holy Maiden stopped on the outskirts of Kassemuir and looked at the people gathered. At the same time, guards from Kassemuir also came to welcome them.

"I already found the White Deer's murderers. It was these two adventurers."

"As a punishment, I'll will execute these two people in front of all the outsiders."

The guards nodded.

Everyone moved away, forming a circle.

Many people from the small town watched the scene.

Marvin instinctively felt something wrong.

He pulled Isabelle's small hand and lightly retreated, escaping to a place where that Holy Maiden's line of sight couldn't reach.

This Holy Maiden gave him a strange feeling.

Usually, the Bai Clan's Holy Maiden served the White Deer Holy Spirit, and she would seldomly roam around in front of everyone. It would usually be the Bai clansmen's priest who would step forward in public.

Even if the matter was this big, there was no need to make an appearance, was there?

As Marvin was hesitating, a burst of cheers could be heard from the crowd.

Obviously, those sturdy guys had already been beheaded.

Blood splashed on the ground.

The fury of the Bai clansmen had been lessened and the Holy Maiden suggested removing the state of martial law on Kassemuir.

Groups began to enter the small town one after the other.

The Holy Maiden glanced at the crowd.

Afterwards, she entered the town with small steps and soon disappeared from everyone's sight.

...

For the travelers, what happened might have just been a brief interlude.

But for Marvin, this was a major event.

People killing White Deers... This meant that the White Deer Cave was about to open. 'Should I join the fray?'

If by any chance he was considered the murderer by the White Deer Holy Spirit, that would certainly be extremely unlucky. But what if he took advantage of the fight between the White Deer Holy Spirit and the murderer to get to that treasure first?

To be honest, Marvin was a bit tempted, but he still had to weigh the risks and the benefits.

'Forget it. This thing feels a bit strange, and I still have to deal with my matters first.'

Marvin no longer hesitated. He waited until the Holy Maiden disappeared from sight before entering the small town.

...

Kassemuir, the brightest Pearl of the Saint Desert.

The most unique buildings of the Bai clansmen were built in this place, specialized cottages built to resist sandstorms, giving the impression of being in a different country.

Each region in Feinan had their own customs. Even if they were both in the south, the desert area felt very different from the East Coast.

The women here were wearing veils, and were usually tightly covered. This was common among the Bai clansmen.

But they did not reject foreigners' strange clothings. Kassemuir was regarded as a forgiving town, unlike some extreme areas in the Saint Desert where outsiders were viewed as fiends.

Marvin brought Isabelle throughout Kassemuir. The two first went to replenish their supplies of food and water.

After walking in the desert for so many days, the young girl was truly exhausted. He let her rest for a day.

The next morning, Marvin carried Isabelle to an alley in the west side of the small town.

At the end of the alley was a small workshop apparently dealing some handicrafts.

The workshop owner was a one-eyed middle-aged man that everyone called One-Eyed Byrd.

"Want to purchase White Deer pottery?" The middle-aged man glanced at the two visitors and called out according to the usual practice.

All kinds of pottery were spread in the room.

Isabelle got interested.

The pottery had all kinds of styles of White Deers, and the decorations were also diverse. This kind of artwork was very rare in the East Coast. It was usually used to carry water, but of course, the ornamental value was a lot higher.

"Do you like those?" Marvin saw curiosity and longing in the eyes of the little girl for the first time.

"If you like them, then pick one."

One-Eyed Byrd indifferently said, "One Wizard gold."

Isabelle's eyes instantly widened, she began to strongly shake her head.

Though a girl from an impoverished household, she knew what a Wizard gold meant.

How could it be used to buy just good looking pottery?

She felt it wasn't worth it.

But she was even more surprised by Marvin unhesitatingly taking out a Wizard gold and handing it over.

"Pick one," Marvin said while giving her a wink. "This isn't just buying pottery, it's a part of the tuition fees."

Hearing this, One-Eyed Byrd suddenly raised his head and seriously looked at Isabelle.

The young girl was somewhat at a loss, so she looked at Marvin and ended up slowly nodding.

Since Lord Marvin already paid, she had to pick the best.

Then, she began to check through all of them, starting from the entrance. Her actions were very serious, spending a lot of time checking each piece of pottery before picking the one she liked the most.

This process took over 20 minutes.

During that time, Marvin and the one-eyed shopkeeper didn't say a word.

Isabelle carefully held that pot. A leaping White Deer was painted on it.

"This one?" Marvin patted her head.

The young girl nodded. Some excitement could be seen in her eyes.

It was the first time someone gave her such a good-looking gift.

"Take good care of it," Marvin faintly said, "We might not meet for a very long time."

"There will be many things that you'll have to face alone. Are you confident?"

Isabelle nodded.

Before they left, Marvin had already asked her opinion.

At that time, One-Eyed Byrd said, "Handing such a young girl to the Shadow Valley... That's cruel."

"Shadow Valley never lacked kids her age, did it?" Marvin looked at him.

"I need to take a look at the Alliance permit," requested Byrd dully.



Marvin quietly took out his proof of identity.

"White River Valley's Baron Marvin, so it turns out to be you."

"Your reputation has spread around the desert recently."

"I didn't expect you to be even younger than I thought." Byrd looked at Marvin with a surprised expression.

Marvin stayed silent. Rumors about him spread way too fast. The matter of borrowing a huge amount of money to develop new territory attracted countless eyes.

His original Overlord status was enough to make people spread news of his achievements. Now, Marvin was a well-known person throughout East Coast.

Many young men would take Marvin as an example, hoping to become a member of the main forces of the wilderness clearing army by training their martial skills.

Even if they couldn't become new nobility, they could mix with vassal Knights.

It was said that the reward for Marvin not only included his Viscount title, but also the right to confer a title upon a subordinate.

The qualification to have two vassals.

But during this wilderness clearing campaign, Marvin didn't rely too much on other people, so there weren't many people he could choose from. So for now, he simply set it aside.

...

After they had a simple negotiation, Marvin finished the first formalities on behalf of Isabelle.

Next was going to the Shadow Valley.

Marvin wasn't worried about this. One-Eyed Byrd naturally had his ways as an intermediary of the Assassin Alliance.

Soon, Byrd closed his handicraft shop and brought two camels from the backyard. He lead Marvin and Isabelle and left Kassemuir.

The three rode the camels westward. A long and endless chain of mountains soon appeared in the distance.

These mountains extended all the way across the middle of the Saint Desert, making this area's terrain even more complicated.

Vegetation was sparse on the mountain range.

Two hours later, the group of three stood at the entrance of a valley.

Shadow Valley.

The Assassin Alliance's Headquarters.

"Let's go." Byrd mumbled and rode his camel inside first.

Marvin and Isabelle followed closely behind.

After Byrd showed a pass, two black clothed men let him go through.

They advanced through the valley, looking at the pretty scenery on both sides.

They saw countless children entangled in a heated battle on the sandy dunes, fighting each other in desperate struggles.

Each of them was holding straight daggers.

Only one child was successful, while the rest died under the daggers.

This was the Apprentice Assassin's test.

Marvin had also come here before.

As the Southern Wizard Alliance's affiliated organization, the Assassin Alliance was a well-known Assassin nurturing spot. This place was an Assassin's paradise. Regardless of what you wanted to advance to, they would satisfy your needs.

Phantom Assassin, Ace Assassin, Blood Assassin... Many Assassin advancements could be completed here.

Marvin also advanced to Phantom Assassin in this place before ultimately walking the road of the Ruler of the Night.

The group of three finally stopped in front of a dome-shaped building.

"We will go in. I'll take her along to handle the procedures."

"Since this is a candidate recommended by a noble of the Alliance, she can be excused from the first test and can directly become an Apprentice Assassin."

"But I can't guarantee that she will stay alive," Byrd cautioned as he took a glance at Isabelle holding her pottery.

Marvin nodded.

"You can leave. The Shadow Valley isn't too welcoming towards outsiders," Byrd told Marvin. "If she dies, we will inform you."

"Otherwise you can come see her once tomorrow."

Marvin smiled. "We both know there is another case."

Byrd looking at Marvin in mild surprise and mumbled, "Yeah... If she graduates early, that would be another case."

"Anyways, leave, the guards won't bear it for too long."

He couldn't have expected that Marvin would simply laugh and shake his head. "Bringing her here isn't the only reason I came to the Shadow Valley."

But his next words shocked all the people nearby.

"I want to participate in the King Assassin's challenge."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 218: King Assassin

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"King Assassin's challenge?"

One-Eyed Byrd checked Marvin out and couldn't help but say, "If I'm not wrong, you should be a Ranger?"

Marvin nodded and casually replied, "Doesn't the rule specify that every rogue class can participate?"

One-Eyed Byrd scratched his head, somewhat at a loss.

Rules are one thing, but it was actually the first time this kind of situation had happened.

A Ranger challenging the King Assassin's challenge? This wasn't an error?

A few military instructors in charge of training the Apprentice Assassins apparently heard the two's conversation, and walked over.

They surrounded Marvin. And a few Scimitar Fighters in charge of the order also joined in the encirclement.

One of them, an extremely arrogant Bai Scimitar Fighter, said, "You want to participate in the King Assassin's challenge?"

"You first have to ask my scimitar..."

However, he didn't get to finish his words before Marvin made a move at lightning speed!

Shadow Step!

The distance between them shortened in an instant.

Marvin made a clean chop with his hand and the other painfully howled, dropping the scimitar.

At that time, Marvin took advantage of the opportunity.

Edge Snatch successful!

"Clang!" He slashed backwards at the other arm of the fighter!

The Scimitar Fighter's complexion paled.

Marvin was really too fast. In that instant, none of them could even react before he finished his slash!

Thankfully, Marvin used the back of the weapon, or else that guy wouldn't have been able to keep his arm.

"Shling!" The others all drew their weapons at the same time, coldly looking at Marvin.

The Scimitar in Marvin's hand turned and returned to its owner as Marvin calmly asked, "Is this the way Bai clansmen meet a challenger?"

There seemed to be a leader among the military instructors. He looked at Byrd. "One-Eyed, this is the person you brought. Make a decision."

Byrd shrugged. "According to the rules, Rangers are indeed qualified to participate in the King Assassin's challenge."

That military instructor sneered, "Good. In that case, let him participate."

"I'll personally be in charge of his first trial."

Once these words were spoken, they all looked at Marvin with sympathy.

Even if Marvin's quick move intimidated people, it was more or less a sneak attack. And that Scimitar Fighter he'd attacked was merely at the 2nd rank.

But this military instructor was a person of importance in the Shadow Valley. He was level 15, and had Master proficiency with his daggers. He would be able to promote to a 4th rank powerhouse at any time!

If he was in charge of the first trial, this random Ranger would definitely be hopeless.

Byrd faintly frowned and looked at Marvin.

Marvin said, quite relaxed, "Just follow the rules."

...

King Assassin's challenge.

This was a challenge with a long history. Ever since the Shadow Valley was founded, that place had welcomed challengers almost daily.

But these challengers were all Assassins.

Even if Rangers like Marvin were also rogues, they were in totally different worlds. After so many years, it could be considered the first time one attempted the King Assassin's challenge.

That information spread across the Shadow Valley very quickly.

All the people who had some free time came to watch.

This was a sort of invisible pressure on those that attempted the challenge.

But this challenge already included a test of the ability to react under high pressure in all kinds of situations.

As for Marvin, he disregarded the other people's whispers. It wouldn't be able to influence him!

'If it wasn't to get a hold of the [Dark Hole] pass, I wouldn't feel like challenging the King Assassin's challenge.'

"I only have to accomplish two or more trials to obtain the Assassin Alliance's acknowledgement and receive a pass."

The Dark Hole was a secret path leading to the Underdark, the world under the surface.

Marvin had no interest in exploring the Underdark for the moment. But through the Dark Hole, he could find an underground river. By following this underground river he could directly cross the Saint Desert and arrive at Rocky Mountain.

Going there through the Underdark was a lot quicker, and what he lacked the most right now was time. As soon as he arrived at Rocky Mountain, his ultimate goal was to find a Source of Fire's Order.

But he also recalled that the King Assassin's challenge wasn't without its own benefits.

He recalled that each winner could obtain a level in Straight Dagger mastery.

This ability might not look useful to Marvin, since after all, he was using curved daggers at the moment. But once he advanced to Ruler of the Night, if he had both Legend level Curved Dagger Mastery and Straight Dagger Mastery, then these two masteries would fuse and turn into a Legend level [Short Weapons Mastery].

At that time, he would be able to freely switch between Curved Daggers and Straight Daggers, the only prerequisite being that his hands needed to be fast enough, or else he would need an item for quick weapon switching.

Regardless, Marvin had to participate in the King Assassin's challenge.

The entire challenge was split into many trials.

First was to defeat an Assassin of similar rank.

This was a comprehensive test of real combat ability.

Usually, more than 80% of the challengers would fail that first trial. The military instructors of the Assassin Alliance were all top class.

Like Marvin's opponent, that guy named Youwen.

...

"Mister Marvin, when you are ready, please tear down that black cloth on your chest."

In a wide open room, a staff member informed Marvin before slowly withdrawing.

Countless pairs of eyes were watching Marvin.

The latter showed no sign of moving.

Everyone waited impatiently, hissing sounds springing up all around.

Marvin's eyes were still closed. Calmly feeling his surroundings.

This was the rule.

The challenge wouldn't start unless the black cloth was torn off. Youwen couldn't attack him.

An Assassin would actually be at a disadvantage against a Ranger in a straight confrontation. Rangers had the same outstanding dexterity, especially Dual Wielding Rangers, and the leather armor of the Assassin couldn't resist the Ranger's slashes.

But the King Assassin's challenge wasn't fair. Youwen entered the room before Marvin and already used Stealth, or maybe Hide. Who knew which corner he was in now.

He might instantly attack once Marvin tore off the black cloth!

Those clamoring spectators also helped Youwen by hindering Marvin's perception.

At least, [Listen] wasn't usable.

Marvin didn't worry. He lightly pressed his right hand on the black cloth on his chest.

Everyone immediately became quiet.

But he didn't tear it down. He only pressed against it and then slowly strolled around the room!

"Coward!"

"Hurry up!"

"How can this kind of trash be qualified to participate in the King Assassin's challenge?"

The audience immediately began to curse.

Shadow Valley's inhabitants originally didn't have a good opinion of this Ranger challenger, and seeing Marvin acting like a scoundrel, they immediately couldn't help but hurl abuse.

The reason was that, apart from weapons, Marvin couldn't use any items. He could only rely on his own strength to get rid of the invisible Assassin.

Youwen's stealth was very powerful, so Marvin couldn't feel any trace of him.

Thankfully, Marvin had participated in the King Assassin's challenge repeatedly, so he had plenty of experience about it.

Most opponents would choose to move slowly using [Stealth].

Based on his experience, Youwen should be keeping a distance of more or less six steps away from him. It would rarely be directly behind because this direction was the one people paid most attention to. It would also obviously not be the front, so it would usually be toward one of the sides.

'Left? Or Right?'

Marvin stopped.

He was at the exact center of the room. This place was the best location to take back the offensive.

Then, under the audience's verbal abuse, Marvin tore off the black cloth.

In that split second, he viciously threw the big piece of cloth to his right.

Then he dashed like a fierce tiger toward the left, slashing down with his two daggers!

The moves were extremely smooth.

This was the strategy Marvin had carefully prepared. Regardless of it was left or right, Youwen wouldn't be able to easily make a move!

The audience's eyes were wide open as they watched Marvin pounce toward a location, his two daggers slashing at an empty place.

And the black cloth also slowly fell to the ground.

Nothing left or right!

'Damn. This Youwen is actually patient...' Marvin's heart sank.

But at this time, an ice-cold feeling could be felt behind him!

It was actually from the back!

A cold dagger appeared over his neck.

Cutthroat!



All the onlookers suddenly held their breaths.

...

Marvin reacted immediately, bending his body backwards.

Following Youwen's surprised "Eh?", Marvin's head ruthlessly hit his nose as his left curved dagger came in at a very ingenious angle, blocking between his neck and the straight dagger, stopping it from moving further.

Marvin smirked.

Cutthroat? Marvin was the god of Cutthroat! Even if he couldn't see through the other's trick, he still wouldn't die from participating in the King Assassin's challenge!

Then came Marvin's counterattack. He let go of the curved dagger in his right hand and grabbed Youwen's right wrist, holding that straight dagger.

Under the acute pain, Youwen didn't have time to use [Vanish] or [Strong Invisibility]!

Marvin took the opportunity and turned, viciously slashing down with his left hand!

"Clang!"

It was too late for Youwen to dodge, and he was barely able to raise a dagger to block. But then, Marvin's curved dagger slid down the dagger and directly plunged towards Youwen's shoulder!

"Pah!"

The curved dagger stabbed in, causing Youwen to let out a scream. The left hand which was about to counterattack lost all strength.

Marvin released his grip and ruthlessly kicked his opponent's chest, sending the latter flying. Youwen cut a sorry figure as he knocked against the wall and lost consciousness.

The audience was in uproar!

Marvin broke through Youwen's cutthroat this effortlessly and could instantly counterattack, knocking him down!

This kind of reaction speed and battle experience was definitely not something that could appear in a mere teenager.

He totally seemed like an old fox.

But in any case, Youwen lost.

Marvin's logs showed the line, [Straight Dagger Mastery +1, you obtained Beginner level Mastery.]

Marvin turned to the staff member.

"Next trial."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 219: Fountain of Youth

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The second trial tested footwork.

Marvin was brought to a special room. This room only had two doors a certain distance away from each other.

Marvin needed to cross this room in fifteen seconds.

The most important things in the room were the obstacles.

Marvin looked at the numerous [Explosion Mushrooms] packed in the room expressionlessly. He was already ready.

Every Explosion Mushroom would move rather slowly.

But even if you didn't step on it, as long you were near, it would automatically explode.

This was a very dangerous lifeform.

Moreover, what was very frightening was that if an Explosion Mushroom exploded, the air wave would spread to the next mushroom, causing a chain reaction.

In other word, as long as you missed a step, what awaited you was an entire room filled with explosions!

Many people gave up upon seeing this trial.

The explosive strength of an Explosion Mushroom was very powerful. Assassins, with their weak bodies, wouldn't be able to survive this room if they met the chain explosion.

This trial tested the mental strength, footwork, reactions, and speed of the challenger.

There were still many people watching Marvin's test from the stands.

They wanted to watch what kind of methods the person who beat someone on the verge of becoming a 4th rank Assassin would use for this trial.

Naturally, if Marvin unfortunately stepped on an Explosion Mushroom, they might cheerfully clap.

After all, no Assassin wished for another class to pass through the King Assassin's challenge.

This simply was a slap to the face of the entire Assassin class!

The staff was still chattering about the rules and the dangers of the room to Marvin when the latter impatiently asked, "Can I start?"

The staff member's face froze and he soon coldly said, "You can."

"I'll be waiting for you at the other side of the room..."

But before his words could be heard, Marvin had already disappeared!

His silhouette was rushing like lightning, moving between the slow moving mushrooms!

Every step was steady and powerful, it was perfect.

"Woosh!"

In a short three seconds, Marvin's silhouette had already appeared at the exit!

All of the mushrooms in the room were safe and sound.

The staff member's mouth was wide open, as he gazed at the scene in disbelief.

The audience was also thoroughly speechless.

This speed... They had seen that Marvin's Dexterity was definitely above 25 because Flicker was displayed when Marvin went through the room.

But to cross the room, 25 Dexterity wasn't the most important thing.

Most important was still Marvin's frightening judgement and experience.

Along with the Demon Hunter Steps, he passed the trial as if he was casually taking a stroll.

The second trial was smoothly cleared.

Marvin's Straight Dagger Mastery once again leveled up, reaching [Apprentice] level.

...

Third Trial, Escape Room.

This trial was also very dangerous for ordinary people.

The challenger would be tied to a chair fixed to the ground with both hands tied behind the back, inside a locked cage.

This was already set in advance.

At the start of the trial, water would start flowing inside the room, up till the entire iron cage was submerged.

If the challenger couldn't undo the bindings fast enough and escape from the iron cage, they could only drown.

Escaping was also an essential skill of the King Assassin.

The challenger would be told in advance that the water would submerge the chair in about half a minute and submerge the cage completely in approximately two minutes.

In other words, if you couldn't escape the cage in two minutes, either throw the towel or die.

This cage was locked, which meant you needed a high Lockpicking skill. Naturally, the first condition was that you could escape the chair binding first.

Marvin wouldn't be able to Lockpick it, and he also didn't have the [Bone Shrink] skill to handle the bindings.

But he had knowledge! He actually knew a loophole in this trial.

He unhesitantly chose to start the trial.

As everyone watched quietly, the water began flowing in the room.

Marvin wore a calm expression. His hands hurriedly shook behind his back.

Soon, the water reached Marvin's abdomen.

But that was when he stood up from the chair!

The audience shook their heads.

They weren't surprised by this outcome, as this Ranger had definitely come prepared!

And for Marvin, getting rid of a rope binding wasn't very difficult. Even without the Bone Shrink skill, he could still untie himself.

The former Ruler of the Night didn't have an undeserved reputation. If he couldn't deal with such simple matters Marvin wouldn't have been so successful.

The next step was crucial. The water already reached his head.

Even if he had Lockpicking tools, he would have to work underwater!

Besides, he had none!

He wasn't a Thief! Nor an Assassin! He didn't learn the Lockpick skill.

But he knew another way out.

Under the countless gazes looking at him, Marvin swam down and quickly arrived at the water flow exit. That was an iron fence blocking a cylindrical water inlet.

He kept holding his breath while fumbling with the fence for a moment. He pulled sharply and the fence came out!

Even though his strength wasn't top class, this iron fence was merely a decorative item.

He then unhesitantly entered that water pipe!

Ten seconds later, Marvin emerged from a pool outside the room with a splash.

He was wet all over and a bit pale, but everyone was looking at him with admiration.

"What? Did you forget to announce the result of the third trial?"

He looked at that staff member who was completely at a loss.

The latter was simply dumbstruck.

He had never seen someone escape like this before Marvin!

He saw many Lockpicking Masters using simple iron wires to try to open the complex lock on the outside of the iron cage. But it hadn't occurred to anyone that that wasn't the only way out.

"He is cheating!" one of the onlookers shouted.

The staff member hesitated for a moment before seriously taking out a handbook.

– King Assassin's Rulebook –

He carefully read through it for about six or seven minutes before seriously saying, "Well, there is nothing against using this kind of method..."

"Thus, you successfully passed the third trial."

Marvin smiled.

His Straight Dagger Mastery leveled up to [Expert]!

It has to be known that Marvin's Curved Dagger Mastery had leveled up from [Expert] to [Master] after the Heavenly Sword Saint's test.

And now, his Straight Dagger Mastery had leveled up this quickly. This was simply cheating the system.

But nothing could be done about it. Who told him to take this path in his past life?

...

Starting from the fourth trial, the King Assassin's challenge was no longer open to public.

Because the fourth challenge was [Assassination]!

The Assassin Alliance would choose a suitable bounty and send the challenger to assassinate him.

If the assassination was successful, the challenge was successful.

But Marvin directly chose to give up on the trial.

His choice surprised the staff member.

After reaching this stage, how could he give up?

What's more, if he could finish the five trials, he would obtain the [King Assassin] title!

Although a Ranger obtaining the King Assassin's title sounded a bit strange, it also was a supreme honor.

Marvin was actually very straightforward. Assassinating a powerhouse was too strenuous, what's more, there was still the fifth trial. He didn't think he could pass that fifth trial.

As for the King Assassin's title, even if it had many bonuses, it was toward skills Marvin didn't have, so it had no uses.

He didn't forget the reason he participated in the challenge. Since he already reached his goal, backing out was the correct choice.

...

Shadow Valley, a guest room.

"Congratulations, Sir Marvin. You cleared three trials of the King Assassin's challenge. As per your request, this pass is yours."

One-Eyed Byrd handed a black-colored pass to Marvin.

There were also three small medals along with the pass.

Each medal represented a trial of the King Assassin's challenge.

If Marvin was interested in the future, he could hand in those three medals to directly start the fourth trial.

"But I need to remind you that there are a lot of dangers lurking around the Dark Hole. Most people don't come out of that place alive," cautioned Byrd.

Marvin nodded.

For the people on the surface, the Underdark was a very frightening place.

But for the experienced Marvin possessing Dark Sight, as long as he was careful and didn't provoke a few abnormally strong creatures, he could hurry and still be safe.

After getting the pass, Marvin was ready to take his leave.

But One-Eyed Byrd suddenly said, "Mister Marvin, your display in the King Assassin's challenge was very outstanding. This made a friend of mine very interested in you. He wants to entrust a matter to you."

"I wonder if you are interested?"

"We will give a very large reward."

Marvin hesitated, and soon linked this request to the bulletin board outside Kassemuir.

"You mean the matter of the White Deer's murders?"

"Isn't your Bai clan's Holy Maiden personally in charge of this matter?" Marvin asked, somewhat surprised. "Why do you still want an outsider to move?"

"Because the Holy Maiden is a fake." An old voice came from behind the door.

Afterwards, an aged man supported by a young maid slowly moved in.

Byrd showed an expression of respect. "Sir Priest."

The old man greeted Marvin with a nod, "This is Viscount Marvin? You are really as young as the rumors said."

Marvin got up and simply greeted back.

Both sides discussed for a moment and Marvin found that this old man was actually the High Priest of the Bai, the man serving the White Deer Holy Spirit.

"Half an hour earlier, we found the corpse of the Holy Maiden Monica."

"It is clear that the woman that appeared in Kassemuir is an impersonator."

"Someone keeps killing the White Deers. We have to stop this. Regretfully, the only clues we found lead to a place our people can't infiltrate."

"Thus, I need your help."

Marvin muttered for a bit, "To be honest, I don't have much time..."

"You can hear about our reward first." One-Eyed Byrd was clearly related to the High Priest. He looked at Marvin and said, "A Fountain of Youth."

Marvin took a deep breath in surprise and unhesitantly answered.

"Deal."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 220: Strange Village

**Translator:** Translation Nation



**Editor:** Translation Nation

Fountain of Youth.

The Assassin Alliance's unique artifact. The Bai clansmen could get a few springs of the Fountain of Youth each year, half of which was offered to the South Wizard Alliance.

It didn't have many effects, and in fact only had one: extending someone's lifespan.

A stream of the Fountain of Youth could extend someone's life by more or less 30 years. The results would quickly decline with repeated uses.

Marvin brought Isabelle to the Assassin Alliance to see whether she could be qualified to become one of the highly regarded Assassins, and then think of a way to receive a portion of the Fountain of Youth's spring.

But now, a Fountain of Youth's spring was placed in front of Marvin.

Marvin didn't have any reason to decline.

This thing was a priceless treasure. Those Wizards on the verge of death were willing to spend all they had to buy a Fountain of Youth's spring.

If not for the Assassin Alliance's powerful strength and their effective protection of the Fountain of Youth, this place's natural resource might have already been occupied by some powerful Wizards.

Thus, even the experienced Marvin didn't know where that Fountain of Youth was.

He only knew that there was a large-scale quest in his previous life, [The Exhausted Fountain of Youth].

This was a quest issued by the Bai High Priest. At the time, it affected all the players in the Saint Desert because the quest reward experience was very high.

From this it could be seen that the Fountain of Youth would most likely become exhausted after the Great Calamity.

Now that there was the opportunity to get a stream of the Fountain of Youth, Marvin would definitely give it a try.

And after accepting this task, the quest menu which had no changes for a while was suddenly updated.

[Incident Investigation: White Deer Murderer]

[Quest Description: A large amount of White Deers have been killed in the eastern part of the Saint Desert. The Assassin Alliance's people followed the trail to a small village of the Sha clan, where they found their main clue. But the Bai clan is restricted by a tribal agreement and is unable to enter their territory. Only you can solve this mystery.]

[Quest Reward: A spring of the Fountain of Youth, 10000 general exp]

...

To Marvin's understanding, this "game system" was helping him integrate a lot faster into this world.

Maybe there was something like a guide function.

Since the system gave him a general exp reward, it meant that this quest shouldn't be missed.

And the quest in itself didn't pose too much trouble.

The Assassin Alliance was set up by the Bai, so they naturally didn't lack experts.

As soon as they found out White Deer were suffering from a large scale hunt, the High Priest sent his able subordinates to check on this matter.

In the end, they followed a suspicious traveller.

"According to what my people saw, he must be a very wicked guy." The High Priest slowly described, "He pretended to be someone near death and lied down under the sun, waiting for a long time."

"But he was actually not dying, despite seeming to be in a continuous near death state. He was definitely waiting for a White Deer to come over."

"And when White Deer approached, intending to save him, he tried to harm it!"

"That time, the White Deer was startled away because my people acted, but it also let the murderer escape. But one of our Master Trackers gave us a path to follow."

"We followed that trail to find a small Sha village."

A hint of helplessness could be seen on the High Priest's face after saying this.

Marvin immediately understood.

Even if the Sha clan and the Bai clan both originated from the Saint Desert, they were mortal enemies at that time. Later on, they signed a ceasefire under the mediation of

the South Wizard Alliance. But it was clearly written on the agreement that they both weren't allowed to step on the other side's territory.

If one of them violated the agreement, it would trigger a war between the two clans, and at the same time lead to sanctions from the South Wizard Alliance.

And it turned out that the people in the Assassin Alliance that belonged to the High Priest's side were all Bai clansmen. There weren't any expert foreigners. The High Priest needed someone else to deal with that matter.

There was only Marvin. The rumors, and his performance at the King Assassin's challenge made up his mind.

"We won't make you take a big risk. We only need you to investigate to find out who is behind that matter," the High Priest slowly said.

Marvin nodded.

He had an accurate understanding of the task's details.

Since he accepted this quest, he had to make enough preparations.

As for sneaking into the small Sha village, this wasn't an issue to Marvin.

He had the Setting Sun Maxim and the Battle Gunner subclass. For the Sha clansmen, he was one of them.

...

A long time later, around dusk, in front of the Sha clan's small village.

Marvin changed his clothes and wearily went in.

Two pistols could be seen on his thigh.

As for his Battle Gunner skill points, they were also assigned. 30 points were spent on [Market Scuffle].

This was a Sha specific fighting technique used along with pistols and shotguns. It had a bonus in melee.

The Sha guard didn't make things difficult for him. After he saw the Setting Sun Maxim flashing between his eyebrows, he quickly let Marvin in, even though he was very puzzled that Marvin was a Battle Gunner but not a Sha.

The village wasn't very big and a lifeless atmosphere could be felt from it.

Marvin walked down the empty street.

The last remaining light of the sun could be seen in the west as it set, showing an amazing view. However, Marvin wasn't in the mood to appreciate it.

'Those two guards' words were a bit incoherent.'

'And when I went through that street, that child looked weird, holding a doll while lifelessly staring at his surroundings. Where were his parents?'

'Aren't there too few signs of life? This should be the time when it is most lively.'

Marvin was thinking over it.

The Sha's flag was still fluttering outside the village. The Assassin Alliance's reinforcements weren't far, but before Marvin was clear about the unusual condition, they couldn't rush in.

Everything still depended on him.

Marvin made a couple rounds around the village, meeting a few people. Those people's gazes weren't kind and they directly left, leaving no chance for Marvin to strike up a conversation.

The sky completely darkened as he found an inn.

The inn's boss was a fatty, and he was surprisingly very enthusiastic.

After Marvin paid for the room, he quickly led Marvin to a good room and personally went to boil hot water.

He said that he hadn't had any business for a long time because this village was too remote.

But Marvin felt something fishy.

A huge bundle was hidden behind the inn counter, a part of it visible.

That was the edge of a curved blade, and it definitely wasn't something Sha people usually used. It should be an adventurer's belonging.

"Guest, please go up first."

"I'll deliver the hot water and the food to you in a moment," the boss said very politely.

Marvin calmly asked, "Boss, why is this village so unfrequented?"

"I noticed the villagers seemed a bit weird, did something strange happen recently?"

The boss froze, and soon laughed. "Don't mind it, we are poor. They carry dead expressions all day long."

"As for strange happenings, there haven't been any in the village, but there actually was something outside the village. It's been rumored that the Bai's holy White Deers have recently been hunted down. Tssk. Serves them right."

Marvin didn't comment and stopped talking with the boss, heading up the stairs.

When passing through the second floor, a woman that smelled of perfume walked over. Her face was thickly covered with cosmetics. Her looks could be considered okay at best, but her figure was pretty good.

When they passed by each other, she threw a coquettish glance at Marvin.

Marvin smiled on the surface and directly opened his door.

...

A dusky candle in the old-fashioned inn.

From the second floor window, the entire village seemed dead. A cold wind blew, and Marvin couldn't help but pull back his neck.

The night was getting darker.

The water and food the boss prepared for Marvin had already arrived.

Marvin carefully checked and these two didn't have any issues.

His perception wasn't high, but based on his experience, something was definitely wrong with this village.

But the Assassin Alliance's people had no justification to come in!

'Unless...'

As he was thinking, knocking was heard from the door.

Marvin kept both hands on his thighs, ready to draw his guns anytime.

"Who?" he asked.

"Me..." A gentle woman's voice could be heard.

Marvin considered for a bit when suddenly, a warm feeling spread through his chest.

He passed the will check easily.

He sneered inwardly before moving over and opening the door.

It was that woman.

She only wore a thin nightgown made out of rough material. It seemed like a sackcloth and simply couldn't hide the scenery under the clothes.

"Mister, I heard the boss downstairs says that you are alone."

The woman came in with a smile, closing the door behind her.

"I also came to this village today and this place felt cold and cheerless. I'm a bit afraid of spending the night alone."

"Moreover, I'm a bit cold here, could you warm me up?" After saying this, she grabbed Marvin's right hand and guided it toward her chest.

Marvin pretended to drool. "Where are you cold? I'll help you by massaging it."

"How hateful." The woman smiled and put Marvin's hand on her chest.

How could she have thought that something cold and hard would press against her!

"What is this?" She was startled.

Marvin shrugged. "Something to warm you up."

He was actually holding a pistol in his right hand!

The pistol was now firmly pressing against her chest. If Marvin pulled the trigger, it would pierce her heart.

Suddenly, the woman's expression changed.

Her head deformed and greatly grew, becoming more than ten times bigger in an instant!

There was nothing on her face aside from a bloody mouth!

"Silly Sha! Your gun is useless against me!"

"I'll carefully enjoy your head!"

"Don't worry, you'll turn into one of us after I eat your head..."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## **Read Night Ranger - Chapter 221: Brain Eating Monster**

Chapter 221: Brain Eating Monster

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

That bloody maw was about to swallow Marvin.

"Bang!"

A fierce gunshot echoed in the room.

Marvin's wrist recoiled as the bullet hit her in her chest!

That frightening monster immediately stiffened!

A nauseating bloody and rotting smell spread as Marvin fired once again!

"Bang!"

This time, the monster eventually fell down.

Her head quickly shrank before ultimately turning into nothingness. She became a headless corpse!

Her chest had a small hole from the shot, but it wasn't bleeding.

Because she wasn't human.

"Brain Eating Monster... Evil Spirit indeed."

Marvin quietly wiped his sweat.

Fortunately he had made the most accurate judgment.

When he entered this village he felt something wrong. The cold gloomy atmosphere carried frightening negative energy. It was likely brought about by a monster from the Underworld.

Thus, he secretly changed his normal bullets and loaded special bullets.

This bullet was soaked in the #4 Holy Water of the Silver Church and had a special restraining power against Evil Spirits.

This was a benefit of being an overlord.

As a loner, it would be extremely troublesome for Marvin to get ahold of Holy Water from the Silver Church.

But after the wilderness military campaign, Marvin and the Silver Church made a series of agreements.

He allowed Collins to open a church in White River Valley, allowed his territory's inhabitants to believe in the Silver God if they wished and opened one of the gold mines to him.

Collins naturally returned the favor by sending a lot of precious items.

Holy Water was one of the less important things he sent. Collins had people bring many barrels of Holy Water, as if it had little value.

Marvin had all the types, from #1 Holy Water to #14 Holy Water. They had all kinds of uses and the concentration varied.

This was the advantage of being an overlord, the gain of resources.

In many cases, resources could be converted into fighting strength.

For instance, if he didn't have that bullet coated in #4 Holy Water, this Brain Eating Monster might have not be so easy to kill.

But killing this woman didn't make Marvin feel satisfied.

His heart even sank.

That recent gunshot certainly attracted attention.

He quickly loaded another bullet in his right pistol while quickly thinking, 'The Assassin Alliance's people didn't need to cheat me. If a Master Tracker followed the clues here and found out this was a Sha village, then it shouldn't be wrong.'

'But even my perception can feel something wrong today. If it was really a Master Tracker, how could it truly think that this was purely a normal Sha village?'

'In other words, if the Assassin Alliance didn't lie to me, this village transformed. And it might have happened in these two days.'



'With the Brain Eating Monster's transformation ability, it might really be possible to accomplish this.'

At this thought, Marvin suddenly shivered.

He quickly went and opened the window!

Only to see the shadows of countless heads growing ten times bigger under the moonlight and gathering at the bottom of the inn!

There were no facial features on their faces apart from their bloody maws and their frightening sawteeth.

They blocked the whole street!

'The entire village has been transformed!' Marvin felt cold.

These Brain Eating Monsters were all pitiful humans before their deaths.

Their heads were eaten by the Brain Eating Monster, killing them. But three hours later, a new head grew.

This head was under the control of the Brain Eating Monster. This was a vicious cycle, as those Brain Eating Monster servants could also transform humans in the same manner.

If he wanted to stop everything, he would have to find the Alpha.

'Since it has only been two days, it must still be resting. Turning a whole village would be very energy consuming even if it was a 3rd rank Brain Eating Monster.

Marvin closed the window as his brain worked to make a plan.

There was already no need to investigate since things had reached this point.

Brain Eating Monsters weren't demons. They were a type of Evil Spirit. Marvin had a deep impression of the Brain Eating Monster corps of the Decaying Plateau's Overlord Diggles.

Considering his projection repeatedly falling in the Scarlet Monastery, it wasn't hard to find out that this matter was most likely related to the Evil Spirit Overlord Diggles.

'He wants to set up a Disaster Door, but those actually need energy that a common treasure can't supply.'

'In the Saint Desert and the East Coast, the easiest to get would most likely be that thing in the White Deer Cave.'

'Damn, did those Evil Spirits go nuts? Do they seriously think the Disaster Door would last for long? The Universe Magic Pool has yet to be broken, so the South Wizard Alliance would definitely notice it. It might also offend some of Feinan's powerhouses, and they would look to settle the bill in the Decaying Plateau.'

Marvin was strolling around the room, a bit irritated.

He didn't want to participate in the matter of the Evil Spirits. These guys' behavior was illogical. Sometimes they would scheme more meticulously than the Devils, while other times they would act hot-headed like Demons. These guys didn't follow common sense, having no characteristic other than liking chaos.

Could this be for vengeance?

Marvin recalled that Diggles' projection was banished twice in the Scarlet Monastery.

This wasn't an impossible explanation...

But there wasn't enough time for Marvin to keep thinking.

Numerous footsteps could be heard coming up the staircase.

Marvin immediately pushed the table and the armoire over to block the door.

Just as expected, noise was soon heard at the door.

A lot of people were banging against the door.

These innocent villagers had already become the Brain Eating Monster's servants and Marvin didn't dare to rashly meet them.

Eliminating one in single combat was fine, but if it was a pack of them, Marvin had to find a way to slip away.

Even if he had Blazing Fury in both hands, their spells wouldn't be of any use against Evil Spirits.

The top priority was still to find a way to escape.

...

"Thud! Thud! Thud!"

The knocking against the door grew increasingly fierce. This inn's wooden door would be unable to hold on for too long.

Marvin frowned.

It would be a disaster if he was surrounded by a big group of Brain Eating Monsters.

Even though his Dexterity was high, one careless mistake and he would lose his head and his life.

He thought of many plans before taking a deep breath.

"Bang!"

He once again opened the window.

There were even more Brain Eating Monsters gathered on the street now.

They already blocked the neighbouring few streets so that nothing could go through. And the closest building from the inn's second floor was very far away.

Ordinary people couldn't make such a jump.

It was very clear that someone had planned this arrangement.

His purpose was simple. It was to bury Marvin alive in this place and not let any news leave.

That Brain Eating Monster should be hiding in the vicinity.

However, Marvin was smiling.

'Thinking I'm an ordinary person is your biggest mistake.'

He then put away the two pistols and fished out a shotgun from the Void Conch!

Like those pistols, the shotgun was also something Constantine used when he was young.

They were of the best quality among the Shas. Marvin's second subclass had little use under normal circumstances.

But he didn't expect it to be so useful today.

He jumped on the window frame and all the huge heads turned toward him.

"Ssss!"

The bloody maws kept shivering. Their desire for brain led them to keep crowding forward.

"Thud! Thud! Thud!"

The door behind Marvin clearly wouldn't be able to hold on much longer.

Marvin no longer hesitated and leaped really high toward the nearest building!

Night Jump!

The Night Walker's ability displayed an extremely strong effect under the cover of the night.

Marvin's body streaked across the sky in a parabola.

But this wasn't enough!

He was still some distance away from the building when his body began its fall.

All the Brain Eating Monsters were excitedly rushing over.

Some even jumped up, wanting to take a bite of Marvin.

But at that time... Second Jump!

Marvin unhesitantly used this bonus ability.

His body once again rose up.

The Brain Eating Monsters let out angry noises.

But even with the second jump, it seemed Marvin would fall a bit short of that building.

At that time, he aimed the shotgun downward, at the Brain Eating Monsters behind him.

"Bang!"

A fierce gunshot echoed from the gun barrel.

Marvin was pushed forward by the powerful recoil from the gun, stopping his fall for a few moments.

"Boom!"

He grabbed the corner of that house's roof and swiftly pulled himself up, avoiding the Brain Eating Monsters.

"See ya, Big Heads." Marvin sneered and sped up to leave!

In order to block off that inn, the Brain Eating Monster had people blocking the streets.

Unfortunately, he didn't think Marvin would actually escape through the sky like this.

After jumping off that building, Marvin madly rushed away from the village.

There wasn't anyone to stop him.

Not far off was the Assassin Alliance's small team.

This small team was mainly in charge of providing support to Marvin's operation while relaying his information.

Marvin crazily ran and arrived to the place scheduled in advance.

But his heart sank when he arrived!

Six cold headless bodies were lying on the sandy hill.

The last remaining person was looking at Marvin in shock. His body was apparently bound by something, keeping him motionless.

"Hehehe..."

A bloody maw suddenly opened wide behind that man's back. The Brain Eating Monster creepily laughed and unhesitantly bit down!

"Woosh! Woosh! Woosh!"

At that moment, three throwing knives flew out from Marvin's hand!

Each knife had been soaked in #4 Holy Water!

The throwing knives flew extremely quickly and neatly stabbed into the Brain Eating Monster's bloody maw!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 222: Are you interested in having some fun?

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"Pshh!"

The three throwing knives entered the Brain Eating Monster Servant's head, followed by an ear-piercing sound. The huge head quickly deflated like a hot air balloon.

The remaining Assassin Alliance member's legs were shaking.

He looked at Marvin while trembling. "This, what is this thing?"

Marvin shrugged, "Brain Eating Monster, Evil Spirit."

The Assassin's eyes were blank. He clearly didn't know anything about these things.

This was actually normal. Because of the protection of the Universe Magic Pool, the Abyss' Demons and Hell's Devils couldn't easily enter Feinan. Even if the Underworld was closer to Feinan, it was also very difficult to come in. In time of peace, people easily forgot the many invasions of the Evil Spirits.

And few Evil Sorcerers or Evil Spirit Envoys would be able to cross over. But under the ruthless rule of the Wizards, it was very difficult for them to gain much influence.

They would be nipped in the bud.

But the Evil Spirits made a big move this time.

Diggles couldn't have simply sent a few Brain Eating Monsters. Even though those guys could eat a lot of brains, they were clearly lacking in intelligence.

He definitely needed someone more able.

"Wh... What should we do now?" That black-clothed man was shivering as he approached Marvin.

Marvin suddenly moved like lightning and aimed the pistol at his head.

"Bang! Bang! Bang!"

Three bullets were fired in a row into his head!

Marvin's marksmanship was really not that great, but it wasn't difficult to hit a target at such close range.

"Crash!"

The poor black-clothed man's head exploded... but he didn't bleed.

Marvin's expression was grave. He quickly took a few steps back and kept a certain distance away.

The black-clothed man didn't fall after his head exploded.

Instead, he staggered for a few steps.

A foul odor emitted from his neck as a huge head grew up.

But that head didn't have any facial features, it was only an abnormal toothy head.

"Hehe..." That mouth smiled. "You are actually able to see through this..."

"Unexpected, I'm surprised you were able to escape from the inside. I spent so much energy on these wastes and neglected the strongest."

Marvin sneered, "It's normal. Your intelligence already is better than a normal Brain Eating Monster's, can't ask for too much."

"You really think I believe a Brain Eating Monster devised that plan?"

Marvin looked toward a dark area to the side!

A white clothed woman unhurriedly came out.

This was clearly her plan.

...

When Marvin hurried over, he didn't have time to check the bodies on the ground and hurriedly threw knives in order to save the survivor, getting rid of that monster.

But then he became aware that something was odd.

He could feel that the guy in front of him reeked of blood.

This bloody smell was faint, but Marvin was sharp enough to notice it.

He immediately checked the number of people and found something wrong.

The backup team had a total of seven people and six of them were lying on the ground. Including that Brain Eating Monster Servant, it reached a total of seven.

Then why was there an extra person?

A Brain Eating Monster Servant shouldn't be able get rid of seven support members of the Assassin Alliance alone.

They weren't ordinary people. Even if one fell in a trap, the others would immediately react.

But they had all turned into headless bodies. There was only one solution. Not only did the Alpha Brain Eating Monster attack, but there was also another person.

Thus, Marvin unhesitantly attacked and burst the other side's head.

Unfortunately, Brain Eating Monsters were a lot different from their easily killed servants. Their recovery ability was very powerful and their heads weren't vitals.

But for Marvin, that Brain Eating Monster was as threatening as that white-clothed woman.

This woman looked and acted the same as the Bai clan's Holy Maiden Monica.

Such effective disguising was very rarely seen.

It might only be comparable with the Mask of the Deceiver in his hands...

'Hold on... Deceiver!'

Marvin had a flash of enlightenment.

He suddenly realized who this woman was.

...

Diggles was the most active Evil Spirit Overlord, especially during the Calamity. He kept infiltrating Feinan.

At least a tenth of the players of Feinan Continent received a quest regarding Diggles.

This guy was as famous as the Shadow Prince.

Marvin also knew a bit about Diggles, and he also remembered a bit about his fierce subordinates.

But Marvin hadn't noticed before because in the lore, the Saint Desert should have been calm before the disaster.

The recent White Deer murders made him realized that his own arrival had created butterfly effects.



But he didn't care. Marvin only cared about quickly strengthening his territory and increasing his own power.

History had changed? He wasn't worried!

His own arrival already changed history. If he became helpless from just a few changes, then his transmigration was meaningless.

As long as he was vigilant and clear-headed enough, he believed that even if there were changes, he would be able to make White River Valley a force to be reckoned by relying on his understanding of this world.

For example, he had deduced that white-clothed woman's identity.

Deceiver.

A pitiful person. She had been deceived by Diggles in the game and worked as his right hand.

She wasn't an Evil Spirit. As for her true race, Marvin wasn't too sure about it.

But since this was the [Deceiver], Marvin thought, 'Better than meeting another of Diggles' subordinates.'

If it was another subordinate, he could only run away.

As for her, Marvin was sure he could convince her to stop working for Diggles.

But she apparently didn't give him a chance to do so!

The white-clothed woman took a look at Marvin and coldly declared, "I already got a reaction, the White Deer Holy Spirit is already infuriated."

"He will leave the White Deer cave within three days, leaving for the desert to seek his sons' murderer."

"I'll go first. If the three of you can't deal with that guy, then you don't need to return to the Decaying Plateau."

After saying that, her body rose up and she flew past the sandy dune!

Before Marvin could say a word to her, she already disappeared in the night!

'Damn, looks like I can only kill those three guys blocking my path.'

Marvin looked behind him and found two of those big brained guys, and then silently shook his head.

One versus three, and they were all Alphas. If this was a normal person, they'd surely be screwed.

What was worse was that while the three Brain Eating Monsters Alphas were surrounding him, the Servants were pouring over from the small village!

They would arrive there in at most five minutes.

If Marvin was surrounded at that time, it would be really dangerous.

At this point, Marvin no longer hid his own strength!

2nd-circle spell, Shapeshift Basilisk!

The next second, a Two-Headed Snake appeared on the cold dune. Before those three Brain Eating Monsters could react, that Two-Headed Snake took the initiative to attack!

...

Three minutes later.

Three badly damaged bodies were lying on the cold dune. And not far from there, hundreds of headless bodies were also inert.

The servants would also die after the Alpha died.

'Brain Eating Monster Alphas are truly tough... Thankfully, Basilisks are actually good at fighting them'

Marvin looked at the field of dead bodies and felt a bit sorrowful. These corpses were innocent Sha clansmen.

The reason a lifeform like a Brain Eating Monster was considered to be at the 3rd rank was because of its ability to transform and mount a sneak attack.

Once identified, Marvin didn't have any issue.

The Two-Headed Snake's body completely crushed the Brain Eating Monsters. These guys' attacks were too simple, they could only bite.

But Marvin's Two-Headed Snake body was huge and had the Soul Absorption ability. Evil Spirits also had a soul, but their souls were evil.

This was the Brain Eating Monsters' nemesis.

Marvin easily killed the three Alphas.

The following matter gave Marvin a headache.

If he simply returned to the Shadow Valley to report this matter to the Assassin Alliance, he could easily receive a spring of the Fountain of Youth.

The quest would be over.

But Marvin was a bit unwilling.

White Deer Cave... Even if he wasn't ruthless enough to kill White Deers to open the cave, now that it was open, how could he not want to go in?

From what he knew, there wasn't just one treasure inside.

Apart from that item able to open a Disaster Door, the [Rainbow Stone], there were at least two other Legendary items inside!

And those two items were very practical. To say he wasn't tempted would be lying.

He hesitated for a while, before ultimately summoning a Night Crow. He wrote a letter and attached it to the Night Crow. It would relay the information of what had happened here to the High Priest.

After accomplishing this, he should be considered to be worthy of the Bai clansmen's reward.

Next was to prepare his trip back to the Deathly Silent Hills!

But this was a long and difficult trip. Even with the Night Walker's speed, Marvin wasn't sure if he could make it.

Perhaps what would be waiting for him was a cave already plundered by Deceiver.

Thus he pondered and ultimately took out a dark blue parchment and a golden quill pen.

He started to write on the blue parchment!

...

In a Wizard tower, most servants had already fallen asleep.

A good-looking Wizard was still inside a room brightly lit by a candle. She was diligently deciphering that page's secret.

She could feel that she was a step away. She was so close.

'I need more time... Just a bit more time...'

She tightly grasped that page of the Book of Nalu, her eyes crimson.

Suddenly, words appeared on a blue parchment on her left:

– Are you interested in having some fun? –

Madeline was speechless.

She wrote back:

– Fuck you! –

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 223: White Deer Cave

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Marvin remained speechless on the quiet dune.

Madeline must have misunderstood what he meant.

He immediately wrote another sentence.

This blue parchment was an alchemy item Madeline made. It was used to communicate across short distances.

He was now in the eastern part of the Saint Desert, which wasn't too far from River Shore City. Thus Marvin tried it.

He originally didn't have much hope, but he hadn't thought that Madeline would answer so fast.

'Is this the feeling of being popular?' Marvin felt the irony.

...

Wizard tower. A sentence appeared once again on the blue parchment.

Madeline slightly frowned. She had thought that it was Marvin being mischievous. She was focused on that page of the Book of Nalu and she didn't feel like bothering with him.

But instead, this sentence seemed serious.

– The White Deer Cave is about to be opened. Could it be that the treasures inside don't interest you? –

Below the sentence was a portrait of Marvin on the move. Madeline had enchanted the alchemy item with an Image skill.

For her, it was only about making this Alchemy item more fun.

'White Deer Cave?'

That place rumored to be full of treasure appeared in her mind.

She hesitated before ultimately clenching her teeth and writing:

– Sorry, I don't have time. –

It meant that she was interested, but was too busy. She wanted to quickly advance to Legend. Only in this way could she free herself from the restriction of Marvin's command contract!

There really were many treasures that would make people drool in the White Deer Cave, but it was protected by the White Deer Holy Spirit, so nothing could be taken out.

Madeline was no fool.

Soon, Marvin's answer refreshed.

– The White Deer Holy Spirit will soon leave the White Deer Cave. Diggles dispatched his right hand Deceiver to steal the Rainbow Stone in the cave. You know what this means. –

This sentence made Madeline gravely stand up.

As a Half-Demon, she understood a lot more about Feinan and various planes than other Wizards.

She naturally wasn't unfamiliar with the name Diggles. During her progress in the Scarlet Monastery, she had been obstructed by this Evil Spirit Overlord several times.

She had already retaliated against him, but Diggles was apparently a lot more patient than she expected.

His reprisal had yet to arrive.

'Hold on... Rainbow Stone?'

A light flashed through Madeline's eyes.

'Isn't it needed to open a Disaster Door?'

– Where did you learn this? – She couldn't help but write this question.

– Come find me, I'll tell you everything. – Marvin answered.

– Since you told me about this, I could simply go to the White Deer Cave by myself, why would I need to look for you? – Madeline unwillingly fought back.

But Marvin's relaxed answer made the Half-Demon grit her teeth in anger.

He lazily wrote:

– Do you even know the path to the White Deer Cave? –

...

Two hours later, Marvin leisurely sat on the magic carpet and began to sum up the situation for Madeline.

In fact, the reason he chose to contact Madeline was her ability to fly.

This was the advantage of being a Wizard.

Magic carpets were items that were always in high demand. It was because even 2nd rank Wizards could use the magic carpet. Even if it would use up a great amount of magic power as fuel, the feeling of flying was something other classes could only admire.

Only with a certain amount of control over chaotic magic power could one start using a magic carpet to fly.

But the magic carpet was truly a money sink. The faster the speed, the more money it would burn.

In the earlier stages of the game, Marvin frequently saw those Wizard players looking at the magic carpets whistling by. Looking cool wasn't important. Even if it looked impressive on the surface, they generally would rely on their potions and consumables.

Thus, the Wizard class always needed money.

A poor Wizard facing lower-leveled rich Wizard might even end up losing.

As long as you had money, you could use the most chaotic method of crushing the opponent to death with magic scrolls.

...

"So there is such a thing."

After listening to Marvin's summary, Madeline's expression became extremely grave.

Diggles was clearly aiming at her and Collins. If they let Deceiver get a hold of that Rainbow Stone, a Disaster Door would definitely open.

Where would he choose to open it?

If it was opened on the East Coast, it would immediately be terminated!

Such a joke! Even the Ancient Red Dragon Eil wasn't able to rampage for long before he was forced back by a small team of Legends.

A group of Evil Spirits would naturally not dare to act like that.

If he wanted to show his power and take revenge, Diggles might open the Disaster Door north of River Shore City!

When the flood of Evil Spirits emerged, even if the South Wizard Alliance reacted quickly, River Shore City might have already been razed to the ground.

Evil Spirits were far stronger than what an ordinary person could imagine. If they knew way of restraining them, like Marvin, they might actually skillfully end them.

But the issue was, how many adventurers and soldiers had experience fighting against Evil Spirits?

If a war broke out, River Shore City would be in danger.

"No, this isn't something we can stop," Madeline decisively said, "I need to report to the Alliance and request assistance."

Marvin sneered, "I only told you my guess. Do you think the Alliance will be convinced?"

"The east is currently short on manpower. Even if the Alliance answers your request for help, how many do you think they would send?"

"For them, the nonsense of a newly risen Viscount and some White Deer murders in the desert, these are all trivial matters, aren't they?"

Madeline turned silent.

It was exactly as Marvin said. The Alliance wouldn't easily believe them.

Marvin had no proof.

If a few Brain Eating Monster's corpses could be used as proof, then the Alliance might dispatch some troops.

But everything would still be for them to clean up.

"Stop Deceiver from getting that Rainbow Stone, while checking if there are treasures in the cave. This is what we should do."

Marvin's finger pointed toward the north. "Over there."

Madeline nodded and controlled the magic carpet to fly through the sky of the Deathly Silent Hills.

Even if many people knew the White Deer Cave was hidden in a corner of the Deathly Silent Hills, there weren't many who knew its exact location.

Marvin was obviously one of them.

He had had three chances to enter the White Deer Cave in the past. And even if he didn't get anything special, he still got some practical things.

He clearly remembered about this hidden treasure cave.

"In front," Marvin said in a low voice. "Remember to use [Greater Invisibility], Deceiver should be near."

Madeline sneered, "There is no need for a reminder. We are already invisible."

Marvin shrugged.

The magic carpet slowly descended.



In front of them was a forested hill. Under the hill was a circle of ordinary flowers. Some broken rocks could be seen in the middle of that patch of flowers.

These rocks were set up very specifically, and were somewhat related to runes from ancient times.

"Nature God's runes," Marvin sighed with sorrow.

The White Deer Holy Spirit was a Heavenly creature, a Legend creature. Its strength was a lot higher than that of the average Unicorn.

It had the ability to foresee disaster and happiness and very few people could deceive it.

Naturally, this was before it descended.

At that time, he was serving the Nature God. Later, when the Ancient Nature God went into slumber and delegated the right to give Divine Spells to the World Tree, the White Deer Holy Spirit followed the World Tree and descended onto the human world.

After descending, its spirituality was tainted by the human world and it lost its all-seeing ability.

Thus, it could be deceived by Deceiver.

The treasures in the White Deer Cave had been collected by it over the past years. Every treasure had its own worth.

The White Deer Holy Spirit wanted to return to Heaven, but Heaven gatekeeper refused it entry because of its mortal world's aura.

The White Deer walked the earth and was dirtied by the filth of the human world, learning many bad things. He was gathering many treasures in order to bribe Heaven gatekeeper in the future to return to Heaven.

This kind of lore made Marvin feel a bit dumbstruck.

But fundamentally, the White Deer Holy Spirit was a very kindhearted lifeform.

But unfortunately it was used later on by a ferocious god who controlled its mind, turning it into a monster that created havoc in the human world.

That was of course something that happened after the Great Calamity.

The current White Deer Holy Spirit should still be very pure and kindhearted.

...

"I didn't find the [Deceiver] you talked about."

The two were hiding in a secret spot outside the cave. Madeline had quietly used a detection spell, but she didn't detect anyone aside from the two of them.

Marvin said in a low voice, "There are many ways to bypass your detection spell, Deceiver isn't an ordinary person."

"Since Diggles dared to send her here, he must have his reasons."

Madeline coldly looked at the White Deer Cave. "Regardless, I'll tear her into pieces!"

Marvin remained silent.

After about three hours, something strange happened outside the White Deer Cave.

First, the flowers began to ignite, and then all the gravel began to shake and turn into fine powder.

The next instant, an imposing golden light was emitted from the stone door that was emerging on the hill.

The stone door slowly opened with a heavy sound!

A deer with beautiful long horns nimbly jumped out from the door.

It lingered around the cave for a moment before suddenly issuing an angry neigh.

The White Deer crazily charged toward the desert in the west!

It was very fast, disappearing from the Deathly Silent Hills in the blink of an eye!

And that stone door also began to slowly close.

At that time, a white-clothed figure quietly appeared beside the stone door.

"She appeared."

No need for Marvin's reminder, Madeline's spell was already ready!

Greater Mage Hand!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 224: Magic Mirror Maze

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The white-clothed woman apparently hadn't expected someone else to be hiding in the surroundings of the White Deer Cave!

Greater Mage Hand immediately displayed an amazing effect. Madeline's spell flung the woman about twenty to thirty meters away!

The next second, a Teleportation Door suddenly appeared in her path.

Madeline was ruthless, sending her through the Teleportation Door.

It was a spell she was very proficient in. In the blink of an eye, Deceiver was more than eighty meters away.

Meanwhile, the door to the White Deer Cave was slowly closing.

Marvin unhesitantly rushed in, and Madeline followed.

Just as they entered the White Deer Cavern, a powerful force enveloped them and split them apart.

Marvin's surroundings spun, making him feel dizzy!

...

Outside, Deceiver's silhouette vanished.

As the door slowly continued closing, a squirrel nimbly jumped down from above, calmly going inside.

'Thankfully I kept a card hidden. Didn't expect that others would actually take advantage of the White Deer Cavern opening to go looting,' Deceiver angrily thought.

If not for her using a Doppelganger to attract Madeline's attention, she might have failed this mission.

The reward after painstakingly luring the White Deer Holy Spirit away being taken by others?

That man and woman had to die!

The squirrel was also dragged by a force, unable to move its body as it fell toward the depths.

...

"Shhhh."

The White Deer Cave's stone door slowly closed.

But at the last moment, a silhouette which seemed as light as a feather floated over. It hesitated there for half a second before finally getting inside.

'This kid can really run. I barely managed to track him... And there is a 4th rank Wizard at his side.'

'If it wasn't because I owed a favor to that guy from the Unicorn clan from that time, I definitely wouldn't meddle in this.'

But regardless of the conflict in his heart, since he had accepted the mission, he had to finish it.

Even if it was just for the reputation of the Shadow Spider Order, he had to assassinate that guy called Marvin.

...

After his surroundings stopped spinning, Marvin was standing alone in front of a mirror, focusing.

This was the depths of the White Deer Cave, the Magic Mirror Maze.

Even if he was already expecting it, when Marvin stood in between multiple Magic Mirrors, he still felt a bit apprehensive.

Especially since these Magic Mirrors could also speak!

"To the left or to the right? This is a question worth considering."

"I think there might be a way out on the left?"

"Of course, it is also possible on the right."

Each Magic Mirror kept whispering, but Marvin ignored their voices.

He already knew that after entering the White Deer Cave, people would be sent to the Magic Mirror Maze by themselves.

There were paths around him, and each path could lead to the exit of the maze, but it could also lead to a dead end.

In the dead end, there would usually be a deadly trap.

The Magic Mirror Maze was an artifact the White Deer Holy Spirit brought down with him when he descended. If an ordinary person wanted to leave the maze, it would be very difficult.

But it was naturally not the same for Marvin.

He knew the way to leave the Magic Mirror Maze: When looking at your own reflection in a Magic Mirror, the mirror would whisper something.

If the reflection was taller than yourself, the Magic Mirror was lying.

If the reflection was shorter than yourself, the Magic Mirror was telling the truth.

If the reflection was a copy of yourself, the mirror was the true exit.

Marvin didn't tell Madeline about this. He planned to tell her only after she asked for his help.

They had that [Azure Letter] after all, so they could still get in touch with each other inside the Magic Mirror Maze.

Marvin looked at all the mirrors around him and, using this strategy, he quickly got information out of them.

He started moving.

In about three minutes, he found a Magic Mirror that perfectly reflected him.

He softly touched the Mirror's surface, trying to pass through this mirror.

He succeeded.

...

Behind the mirror was a small room.

The room was completely deserted, there was only a table with one item on it.

It was a box. And inside the box was an extremely huge Night Pearl!

That thing was something from Heaven, and was invaluable.

But unfortunately, it didn't have any use.

'Unlucky.'

The Magic Mirror Maze had a rule. You could only leave the Maze after finding the exit mirror three times. But every time you did, you would get a reward.

'Didn't expect to get a pearl this time.'

Marvin put the Night Pearl away and left the room.

Then he was once again inside the Magic Mirror Maze.

When he turned to look at a mirror, the reflection had changed and was a bit taller than Marvin.

This meant the Magic Mirror would lie.

"Go left, the exit is there," it advised.

Marvin ignored the left and started his second trip.

This time, he spent no less than ten minutes finding the true reflection.

He entered the room.

This room was a lot more spacious than the previous one. It was also rather empty, only having one cabinet. The first three drawers of the cabinet were empty.

Only the last one had something, a pair of shoes.

It was a pair of straw sandals.

Marvin didn't know whether to bitterly laugh or cry.

His luck was really too bad!

The White Deer Cave had so many good things, yet he got a Night Pearl on his first try, and that pair of straw sandals the second time!

Even if it was a strange item, it had a severe restrictions on use.

That was a pair of straw sandals that only Monks could wear!

It also only had one effect: Can't be damaged.

'Items from Heaven are all tricky items... I got nothing useful.'

Marvin grunted, annoyed. This effect on the sandals wasn't bad.

Monks would depend on very few external items due to their religious practices. But Monks would carry several pairs of straw sandals with them.

It was because their fights were really too violent. They basically had to change their sandals after every fight.

In the game, in that struggling leveling period, almost every Monk player had to learn [Craft Straw Sandals], that pitiful skill. Once they saw a suitable plant by the roadside, they would craft a makeshift pair of straw sandals so they could at least wear something.

And many Monks could be seen on the side of the road, crafting straw sandals. This could be considered as one of the beautiful pieces of scenery in Feinan.

This pair of straw sandals actually fit Monks the most, and would save them from a lot of inconvenience.

But it was of no use to Marvin!

'Forget it... Just keep it.'

He sighed. Maybe later he would run across an amazing Monk and could use that pair of straw sandals to make friends with him.

As for Inheim, he should already be wearing the Void Boots, so he most likely didn't need it.

...

He once again returned to the Magic Mirror Maze. Marvin was about to continue onward by following the reflections.

Suddenly, a wave of heat was emitted from his waist.

It was the [Azure Letter].

Marvin faintly smiled and took it out.

It was Madeline, as expected.

– How do you get out of this place? You must know, right? I nearly died from a Dissociation spell from above! –

Marvin faintly laughed and quickly answered:

– I naturally know how to leave the Magic Mirror Maze, and you can also obtain many advantages. But you have to agree to one thing. –

Madeline mumbled while looking at Marvin's answer.

'This guy really seems to know something!'

'He was only a little Ranger, how could he suddenly become so fierce in such a short time.'

'Nevermind, let's trust him for now.'

Both sides quickly made a deal. Of course, because of the command contract, Marvin wasn't worried Madeline would go back on that deal.

Marvin told Madeline the method and then kept going forward.

...

This time, he spent a lot longer finding the exit than the two previous times.

He passed through the true reflection's Magic Mirror and arrived into an even more spacious room.

This time, there was another door on the other end of the room.

If Marvin went through that door, he would leave the Magic Mirror Maze and arrive at the true depths of the White Deer Cave.

That place had countless treasures.

But those treasures couldn't casually be taken away. If more than three were taken out, the White Deer Holy Spirit would notice.

It would follow their aura to find the thief. Marvin had the feeling that Constantine and Daniela might not be that Heavenly Beast's match.

This current hidden room only had a weapon rack set up.

On the rack was an average looking rifle.

Marvin, who already despaired because of his bad luck, opened his eyes wide!

The rifle<sup>1</sup> appeared!

It actually appeared as one of his rewards of the Magic Mirror Maze!



Marvin impatiently rushed over, holding back his surprise to check and make sure he wasn't mistaken.

How could he have imagined that a shadow would come over, staggering, from another corner of the room!

That was a black-clothed middle-aged man!

Marvin was suddenly startled. There was something else in the White Deer Cave apart from him and Madeline?

Deceiver? Definitely not!

That guy looking at Marvin was also stunned.

Soon, he showed a friendly smile. "I finally met someone."

"I've been around this terrible place for so long, can you tell me where this is?"

He slowly moved toward Marvin as he talked.

He had a good-natured smile plastered on his face and wasn't carrying any weapon.

He didn't look like an enemy.

But Marvin already had his hands on his pair of pistols.

Suddenly, Marvin felt an acute pain on his back!

---

T/N1: It's not an automatic rifle. It's this.

[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Long\\_gun](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Long_gun)

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 225: Weeping Sky

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

In that split second, that middle-aged man disappeared.

He instantly appeared behind Marvin, ruthlessly piercing his back with the dagger!

No!

The expression on that middle-aged man turned from being ruthless and complacent to one of shock.

Because he found out that when his dagger pierced through Marvin's back, darkness appeared in the room!

And Marvin's body turned into a shadow of nothingness.

Shapeshift Sorcerer, Shadow-shape!

Physical damage halved!

No vitals!

This was the strongest point of Shadow-shape.

Marvin still felt the chill as he looked at his HP that had sharply decreased. He lost half of his HP in a split second from that ruthless attack!

If he hadn't switched to his Shadow-shape at the last second, he might have already died!

'Damn, he is from the Shadow Spider Order!'

Marvin noticed the crest on that middle-aged man's dagger.

Even if that crest was quite small and inconspicuous, Marvin still noticed it.

'Is it because of Black Jack's matter? Not too likely... When I killed him, Black Jack had already betrayed them and turned into a Outlaw of the Crimson Road.'

Marvin didn't have much time to think.

Before that middle-aged man could react, Marvin counterattacked!

Before Shapeshifting, he had already used [Eternal Night]!

This skill created darkness and endless shadows.

The Marvin relied on his powerful [Endurance] specialty to ignore the pain and use Shadow Bind!

But the middle-aged man was extremely nimble and dodged the skill, disappearing from where he was.

Shadow Bind failed!

'Quite skilled, at least a 4th rank Assassin. Most likely Half-Legend!' Marvin shivered.

Wasn't that one of the strongest Assassins of the Shadow Spider Order? With a few powerful tools, they could even assassinate Legends!

This kind of powerhouse actually came to assassinate him?

...

On the other side, the middle-aged man who retreated from the darkness also felt cold.

He was doubtfully looking at that strange patch of darkness in the center of the room, a bit afraid.

Being inside that area truly felt like it was night time.

What kind of skill was that? He had assassinated all kinds of people during his life, but had never met such a strange skill.

A shadow rushed out like a wisp from the darkness.

Blood was flowing out of his back as he frantically ran toward the Magic Mirror!

'Want to run?'

The middle-aged man sneered and disappeared and reappeared behind Marvin!

His straight dagger ruthlessly thrust toward his back, following that wound and piercing Marvin's heart!

'Wrong!'

'It's a Doppelganger!'

The middle-aged man reacted very quickly.

He suddenly turned around.

The patch of darkness in the middle of the room had already disappeared. The true Marvin ran to the other side of the room while holding a rifle.

He took a deep look and memorized that man's appearance. He then opened the entrance and escaped.

The middle-aged man tried to go in, but he failed.

Because this was the first time he had entered the room, even if it was accidentally. If he wanted to get out of the Maze, he had to do it three times.

"Fuck... That kid managed to escape."

'To be able to become friends with so many Legends, he really has some skill... This deal might be bad!'

The middle-aged man was playing with his dagger in an irritable mood, but he didn't have an upset expression.

In any case, that kid was screwed.

...

Outside the Maze, in the depths of the cave.

Marvin was laboriously trying to cover the wound in his back. But he still couldn't stop the blood from flowing.

His face was extremely pale.

It was too dangerous this time.

If it wasn't for him being a former Assassin and being familiar with their hidden moves before an attack, he might have been unable to see through the other side's intentions.

He might have died before even noticing!

This was what made Assassins terrifying. They were a group of people living in the shadows. They were good at disguising, and good at killing with one blow.

'Fortunately I guessed right. This guy definitely arrived there by accident, so he couldn't leave through the door like me.'

'I don't know if this was his first time escaping the Maze.'

Marvin took out a bottle of medicine for wounds and a bandage, trying to wrap his wounds.

Thankfully, that [Quick Bandage] skill he learnt from Old Sean came in handy. Even if it wasn't as effective as Old Sean who had the [First Aid Master] bonus, stopping the bleeding shouldn't be a problem.

Marvin checked the log while bandaging himself up. The wound was on his back. This was really too inconvenient.

But at that time, two messages flashed on his logs, startling him:

[Unknown Poison infiltrated your body.]

[Your body will stiffen for two hours starting now.]

"Fuck!" Marvin cursed in rage.

His pulled out some antidotes, but before he could put the first one to his mouth, a feeling of dizziness spread all over.

"Crash!"

That antidote fell to the ground and broke into pieces.

And Marvin stiffly fell. His back wound suddenly opened and blood flowed even faster.

He started seeing black. He exhausted all his strength to move half a step forward and firmly grabbed a blade of shining white grass!

...

'He should already be dead by now.'

'Even though it wasn't dipped into deadly poison, stiffness and a bleeding wound should be deadly enough.'

The middle-aged man unhurriedly strolled around the Magic Mirror Maze.

Just as Marvin guessed, he really didn't know how to solve that Maze. But he had plenty of time and could slowly observe.

These Magic Mirrors were very interesting.

But surprisingly he came across a white-clothed woman after turning a corner.

Both of them looked at each other, and the middle-aged man exposed his trademark smile. "Finally meeting someone else."

"Can you tell me how to go out? I have been going arou..."

Before he could finish his sentence, the white-clothed woman already made a move!

An extremely vicious flame condensed in her palm and rushed underground, before coming out to grab his ankle!

The middle-aged man awkwardly dodged, using an escaping skill to run away from the flame's claws.

He still felt pain on his ankle, but the other side simply remained silent and kept casting!

The middle-aged man kept complaining and turned to run.

'Damn... Why is there a nutcase like her in this maze...'

'Who's this woman?'

He hadn't recognized her at all!

...

"Look! He is waking up."

"Gasp, the little thief is waking up..."

"Is he the one killing our siblings? The one who made father so angry?"

"No he isn't. I didn't feel any grieving resentment from our siblings on this person. He shouldn't be the killer."

Bits and pieces of sentences could be heard by Marvin side. He felt a huge headache.

"How do you feel?" a gentle voice asked him.

He tried opening his eyes, and found that he was lying on a stone bed. Beside the stone bed was a girl wearing very simple clothes. She had beautiful light blue eyes.

Behind her was actually a group of young deers!

Those noisy voices came from them.

Marvin strenuously propped himself up.

"I'm still good. Did you save me? Thank you."

He took a deep breath and forced a smile.

He managed to survive.

It really wasn't easy.

"It's them." The young girl smiled and pointed at the White Deers behind her.

"You were poisoned and they helped you get rid of it. As for your wounds, they also used a skill to help you heal. I don't have that kind of skill."

Marvin nodded.

He thanked those cute young deers.

Without them, he might have really been in danger.

Even if the poison only made him stiffen, his wound kept bleeding. With such blood loss in this situation, even a sturdy Barbarian wouldn't have been able to escape death.

Let alone Marvin.

Thus, before he lost consciousness, he grabbed the shining white grass.

This was something he had experienced once before.

This kind of shining white grass was planted by the White Deer Holy Spirit to protect his children.

If someone touched any of the grass, these young deers would notice it.

To take treasures away from the White Deer Cave, you would have to be cautious and not run into the white grass.

But at that time, Marvin had no other choice. He could only do it.

He knew that with the curiosity of the young deers, they would certainly check on the shining white grass.

And at that time, if they found Marvin seriously hurt, they would definitely help him due to their benevolent hearts.

They weren't too powerful, but in the field of healing magic, they were stronger than any type of Priest.

This was the strength of a Half-Heavenly lifeform.

Even though they were only 2nd rank, they could easily cure Marvin's wounds. As for the poison, they could also remove it.

Marvin asked, and found that only fifteen minutes had passed since he passed out.

They found him eight minutes after he pulled on the grass, and used seven minutes to bring Marvin back from the brink of death.

This made Marvin very grateful to them.

This group of cute White Deers was really lovable. They kept chattering around Marvin, curiously asking him some questions.

They did not dare to be rash when the White Deer Holy Spirit was there. But now that their father left, they couldn't restrain their lively nature.

Marvin could only answer their strange questions one by one.

After a while, that girl stopped them.

"Oh right, this is what you were holding when you lost consciousness. I'm returning it to you now." She handed over the rifle.

Her expression was very pure, apparently not caring what kind of treasure it was.

Marvin excitedly received the rifle.

He gently caressed the decorations on the rifle.

Although the outcome of Inspect was a huge question mark, he couldn't miss the decorations.

[Weeping Sky]. This was its name.

Of course, it had an even fiercer nickname, [Dragon Slayer Rifle].

One of the three outstanding Dragon Slaying items.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 226: Rainbow Stone

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The rifle looked average, but that was because it had yet to be activated.



Even if Marvin felt that the name [Weeping Sky] was a bit unnatural... Rain wasn't made of the sky's tears... But this Legendary Item's power was beyond ordinary people's imagination.

This rifle was a specifically designed item. It might actually be better to use Magic Weapons against ordinary lifeforms.

But its effects would be totally different against a Dragon!

This thing was built by a Dragon Slayer madman to be used against Dragons!

He was a Master Blacksmith whose wife and children died in the first Dragon Disaster. Thus, he personally built three weapons.

These three weapons were considered taboo by the Dragons. Rumors said that many Dragons joined hands and destroyed those three weapons.

But countless warriors who wanted to slay a Dragon were still diligently looking for these three weapons.

These three weapons were called the "Dragon Slayer Set" by the players. With any of those three items on hand, you would have the strength to slay a Dragon.

Because each of these weapons had three unique properties.

First, the person holding the weapon would be immune to Dragon Might.

Just this attribute made countless warriors run around everywhere, looking for one of them. What was the most powerful point of a Dragon? Its huge body? Its frightening Dragon Magic?

No.

What made Dragon gain the upper hand in fight were usually two things. The first was the ability to fly, and the second was the pressure of Dragon Might.

Most people couldn't resist Dragon Might. Under the suppression of that natural pressure, many people would be unable to pass the willpower check and would directly lose their battle ability.

How could one fight if one was unable to stand?

During the attack of Tornado Harbor by the Ancient Dragon Ell, the Elven Prince Ivan was the name that was the most praised. But the main reason was that his first attack was able to catch Ell off guard.

It had to be known that when Ell arrived, he had accumulated energy for a Dragon Breath, and his Dragon Might was earth-shattering!

If the Dragon Might spread to everyone, those Legends might be temporarily suppressed and those guards wouldn't be able to do anything.

But Ivan struck down Ell with a punch. This not only interrupted his spell and stopped his advance, it also scattered his Dragon Might.

This detail was extremely important. Even if ordinary people didn't know, the knowledgeable Wizards obviously knew.

If not for Ivan's punch, it would have been a huge question as to whether or not the South Wizard Alliance's small squad of Legends would have been able to stop Ell!

This showed the frightening power of Dragon Might.

When Marvin used the cannon to shoot the Dragon, he got a bit of resistance to Dragon Might.

But with this rifle in hand, he would be completely immune to Dragon Might!

It would counter the superior advantage of a Dragon!

But this was only one of the three properties of the set of weapons.

The second property was even more overbearing.

[Ignore Defenses if the Target is a Dragon]

Ignore Defenses!

Why is it so hard to kill a Dragon? It naturally was because of their frightening defenses and recovery abilities. Not mentioning an Ancient Dragon, even an ordinary Red Dragon was still able to escape after being beaten up by Ivan.

If not for that precise shot by Marvin, he might have actually gotten away.

This was the strength of a Dragon's defenses.

In fact, if he handed that gun to Ivan, Marvin guessed that an ordinary adult Chromatic Dragon wouldn't be able to take more than ten bullets!

No matter how tough their defenses were, the gun would do the trick!

This was the property the Dragons dreaded the most.

The defenses they were the most proud of were gone. In front of the Dragon Slayer rifle, it was as if they were naked...

...

As for the third property, it was a passive, but was a negative one.

[Dragon Enmity +100]

When holding the weapon, Dragons would dread him.

Because who knew how many Dragons had already died from this weapon. There were some evil Dragons and some kindhearted Dragons, so this depended on who the user was.

Openly revealing this weapon would be like declaring war to the Dragon Race. There would be a lot of troubles.

As far as Marvin knew, the expert who held this weapon before and sought fame... Died.

They might have been able to kill many Dragons, but the Dragons, who couldn't stand it anymore, joined hands and stood up against him... That's right, the always arrogant Dragons allied in front of a threat to their lives, and used some plots to target that individual.

Regardless, the Dragon Slayer set hadn't come out for a very long time.

Marvin already expected the rifle to be hidden in the White Deer Cave.

Thus he made a deal with Madeline earlier. If she found this rifle, she had to hand it over to Marvin.

But Marvin hadn't expected that after two really bad draws, he luckily got the rifle while almost dying to a Shadow Spider Assassin!

This rifle had to be carefully kept away or it could lead to some disasters.

Marvin's storage wasn't big enough for this long rifle, but he was already prepared. He wrapped a huge piece of cloth around it and put it on his back.

That girl and the young White Deers had been enthusiastically revolving around Marvin all along.

This gave the feeling of not having seen anyone for a long time.

...

The girl was called Muse, named just like the Goddess of Art. She was serving the White Deer Holy Spirit.

She also was one of the Bai's three Holy Maidens. But she hadn't come out of the White Deer Cave since she was a child, always waiting upon the White Deer Holy Spirit.

From Marvin's point of view, the person serving the White Deer Holy Spirit was in fact just a nanny taking care of these young deers.

Apart from the White Deer Holy Spirit, there weren't strong guys in the White Deer Cave. Marvin could kill these young deers in one clean move. As for the Holy Maiden Muse, she was the only Holy Maiden without any power.

But Marvin definitely wouldn't do something like that.

He originally came to the White Deer Cave to try his luck with treasures while stopping Deceiver's plot.

Now, he not only had something good in hand, but this group of cute young deers had also saved his life.

He would naturally repay the favor of his life being saved.

He soon started telling everything about Deceiver's conspiracy to Muse.

The girl's expression became very grave.

In fact, if Marvin didn't say anything, she was about to ask why Marvin had appeared in the sealed White Deer Cave.

After all, it had been so many years without an outsider coming in.

...

"It's more or less like that. Deceiver, with her Evil Spirit subordinates, wantonly slaughtered these guys' siblings in the Saint Desert."

"Then she hid outside, waiting for the White Deer Holy Spirit to leave before entering to take away the Rainbow Stone."

"This way, she could establish a Disaster Door outside the Deathly Silent Hills and let the Evil Spirits invade Feinan," Marvin solemnly said.

Those young deers listened and immediately became extremely nervous.

"Ah! I know these Evil Spirits, they are very disgusting. They like to harm others."

"Turns out it's a thief wanting to steal father's Rainbow Stone. We have to tell Father."

"What can we do if the thief is very troublesome? I still haven't learned how to fight!"

...

"So, did Mister Marvin come to stop that thief?" Muse asked Marvin.

Marvin faintly smiled. "It could be seen like that. Even if it wasn't like that before, it now is."

Muse nodded. Even if she was pure and kindhearted, she also wasn't a fool. Marvin's purpose in entering the White Deer Cave wasn't necessarily that simple.

But she also didn't need to expose him.

"So what should we do?" she asked, "Immediately get in touch with Sir Lorant?"

Lorant was the name of the White Deer Holy Spirit.

"There might not be enough time," Marvin said in a heavy voice. "Sir White Deer Holy Spirit already left the cave and should have arrived at the Saint Desert. He might be surrounded by Evil Spirits."

"Their goal should be to stall for time. Deceiver was delayed and I got in the cave first, but she should have been able to get in. Deceiver should soon appear from the Magic Mirror Maze. She knows where the Rainbow Stone is located."

"We have to immediately shift it to a secret location."

"Rest assured, I have no interest toward the Rainbow Stone," said Marvin sincerely.

Muse slightly frowned.

At that time, a young deer skipped over from behind her back and a white light swept through Marvin's body.

"He didn't lie, Big Sis Muse," that young deer said.

Muse nodded.

These young deers had remarkable abilities, able to distinguish between truths and lies. They could see through someone's heart and see what they felt.

Since they felt Marvin was reliable, there shouldn't be any issue.

Thus she told Marvin, "Follow me, I'll bring you to the Rainbow Stone."

..

Hawley was very depressed!

As one of the best Assassin of the Shadow Spiders, he was one of the highest ranked staff. This assassination of Marvin wasn't something he wanted to do originally.

It was rumored in the East Coast that Baron Marvin... oh wait, it was Viscount Marvin now, had a good friendship with at least a dozen Legends.

If that kind of guy died, who knew what kind of powerhouse would drop by to retaliate.

But the favor he owed that Unicorn guy was really too huge. And the other side currently had a high position in the South Wizard Alliance. Reportedly, he was an assistant in the Finance Department. He held a lot of money in his hands.

The favor and a large sum of money gave him no choice but to continue this horrid assignment.

The result was pretty good. He killed his target, but unfortunately, he was chased by an insane woman!

He staggered on his way, dodging that woman's attacks while relying on his extremely good Perception to escape the Magic Mirror Maze.

The only pity was that those two rooms appeared to have something good. But he didn't have enough time to get a hold of them.

As an Assassin, he knew that he had to give up on some things to keep his life.

This was something he encountered countless times in his long career. As long as that woman paused to pick up something, he would be able to get rid of her!

But what made him mad was that the crazy woman apparently ignored those very good items and kept chasing him!

Hawley truly wanted to cry.

He also didn't consider fighting back. Even though this woman was at the same rank as him, as a peak Sorcerer, her spells were enough to send him on his way.

She apparently also had a special method to pursue him. This made him feel extremely depressed.

The two kept speeding through the depths of the cave.

Suddenly, a fork with three different paths appeared in front of them.

Hawley intended to use one of his trump cards, a Doppelganger, to escape that woman's chase.

How could he have expected that a group of adorable deers would appear in his field of view at that time!?

Behind that group of young deers was a girl holding a seven-colored stone in her hand. She looked stunned as she saw the two people.

What startled Hawley even more was that behind that girl was Marvin, who should have been dead a long time ago!

'He is still alive?' Hawley couldn't help but blink repeatedly.

And most shocking of all was that the crazy woman instantly stopped her attacks when she saw that group.

...

'Fuck!' Marvin cursed inwardly.

Misfortunes never come alone.

He originally thought of taking the young white deers to escape from Deceiver, but he hadn't expected meeting her here.

Moreover, there was that Assassin!

The Assassin's gaze was full of ill-intent. He probably wanted to attack. After all, the Shadow Spider's creed said that they must kill their target.

As for Deceiver, she was staring at the Rainbow Stone!

"Sir Marvin, what should we do!"

The group was panic-stricken.

Marvin took a deep breath and then tore an azure letter behind his back and crumpled it into a ball, letting it fall on the ground.

He then took two steps forward, blocking the path of those two.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 227: Lie and Change

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

At the fork, the situation was very subtle.

Deceiver and the Assassin were like two sharp blades stopped mid-swing. The former was attentively watching the Rainbow Stone, while the latter was attentively watching Marvin.

And Marvin was standing alone in front of the two. He not only had to be careful of the Assassin's assassination, but also had to protect Muse and the young deers.

He couldn't let Deceiver succeed.

After all, even if the target of reprisal was River Shore City, White River Valley was also close by.

If the Disaster Door opened, who knew how many innocents would be involved? White River Valley would definitely suffer from the repercussions.

Moreover, because of his deal with Madeline, River Shore City was already part of his power.

He had to do everything he could to stop this from happening.

The key was to stall for time.

Marvin pondered and suddenly asked, "Hey, isn't there a more spacious place?"

Muse was the one he questioned.

The girl froze and pointed at another passage of the fork, "There. Not too far."

Not waiting for Deceiver and the Assassin to react, Marvin shouted, "Go!"

Muse decisively rode on a deer and another young deer took the initiative to pounce over.

They turned and ran off leaving a trail of dust behind.



The young deers' legs were extremely quick. They rushed as fast as lightning down the dark tunnel!

Deceiver and Hawley pursued, unwilling to let go. Their speed was also very frightening. One used magic and one used his innately high Dexterity.

There wasn't much difference between both sides.

Soon, Muse shouted, "Marvin! It's up front."

"Got it!"

The dark tunnel soon reached its end.

With Marvin's Darksight, he already saw through the empty room behind the passage. That was a vast area, enough for what Marvin had planned.

Then he gently patted the young deer's head and leapt high.

He stably landed at the exit of the tunnel.

The deers left the tunnel in an instant and then stopped, looking at Marvin.

Deceiver and Hawley also rushed over. The latter stayed silent, directly using Strong Invisibility.

If it was before, Deceiver might have already thrown a spell at him.

But at that time, her attention was fully focused on the Rainbow Stone.

She coldly told Marvin, "Move."

Marvin took a deep breath and got ready to counter any sudden attack.

He looked straight at Deceiver and said as quickly as he could, "You are being deceived."

"Your younger brother isn't in Diggles' hands."

"Moreover, even if he did have him, do you think that with Diggles' crafty nature, he would easily release him?"

Changes appeared on Deceiver's face for the first time!

"Who are you? How do you know so much?"

But Marvin already had no time to answer, because a frightening killing intent locked onto him!

That person felt like a poisonous snake leaping at him from the shadows.

Instantly, a roar echoed through the entire White Deer Cave!

"Roaaaarrrr!"

Marvin's body suddenly began expanding, transforming into a tall Bear.

His body looked like a small mountain blocking the tunnel exit. To the young deers it looked like a protector blocking the enemies' path.

The Assassin Hawley had appeared, his dagger stabbing toward the back of Marvin's head!

He didn't believe Marvin wouldn't die this time.

But he once again miscalculated.

Marvin's body transforming caught him unprepared. His dagger was originally aiming at Marvin's head, but it now aimed at the butt of the Asuran Bear!

The sneak attack of a 4th rank Assassin. Even if the Asuran Bear had an overwhelming defense, he still felt an intense acute pain on his butt.

But he managed to dodge a vital blow.

There weren't many people who, when their lives were in danger, would transform to make use of this opportunity. Marvin was one of them.

He angrily swiped with his paw. The startled Hawley didn't even try to pull out his dagger and directly escaped!

"Roaaaarrrr!"

The Asuran Bear with a small dagger stabbed in his butt started to launch a fierce offensive on Hawley!

Despite the high level Assassin's astonishing Dexterity, he was also completely scared by Marvin!

...

'This is... Asuran Bear!'

'This aura...'

'Shapeshift Sorcerer!?'

Deceiver didn't dare to believe what she was seeing.

She wanted to be told that the scene in front of her wasn't true. 'How could there be another Shapeshift Sorcerer in this world?'

'According to Lord Diggles' words, my younger brother and I are the last Numen!?'

'Didn't he say there wasn't another Shapeshift Sorcerer in this world?'

She had stayed in the Decaying Plateau for a long time and firmly believed this. She had come to Feinan several times and secretly asked around. Those so-called erudites, Wizards, didn't even know of Shapeshift Sorcerers!

Therefore she thought that Diggles' words must be true.

But this guy in front of her, this Shapeshift Sorcerer told her that Diggles deceived her.

Was it really a lie?

Her mind was in chaos and she temporarily didn't know what to do.

...

On the other side, an intense fight was still going on.

Oh... Intense might not be the good way to describe it. One-sided would be more fitting to describe the Asuran Bear chasing Hawley around.

Hawley didn't want to fight Marvin right now.

What Assassins were most afraid of were this kind of monster with a powerful body.

Without special preparations, he simply couldn't attack the Asuran Bear's vitals.

And even if he already was at the 4th rank, if he was slapped by the Asuran Bear's paw... the outcome would be very pitiful.

He didn't want to be slapped into mincemeat.

Even if the Asuran Bear's Dexterity was inferior, his experience was extremely rich.

What made Hawley even more depressed was that Marvin seemed to know every single Assassin's escape move, and seemed extremely familiar with their escape routes.

Each time he would use his experience to make up for his lacking Dexterity and would appear on the path Hawley wanted to use to escape.

He was startled again and again.

If not for Marvin's reduced Dexterity and his own crazy amount of escaping skills, he might have already been captured.

'Won't do. I have to think of a way to wait until this kid turns back.'

Facing the ruthless Asuran bear, Hawley couldn't do anything.

He clenched his teeth and was about to use his Doppelganger skill, when suddenly the situation changed!

That white-clothed woman who was still hesitating suddenly moved!

She charged over, as if she was flying, toward the Holy Maiden Muse and the young deers!

Marvin had no choice but to give up on Hawley.

He once again blocked in front of Deceiver, roaring, "You don't believe me?"

"You would rather believe an Evil Spirit Overlord's lie over the words of someone of the same bloodline?"

Deceiver slightly lowered her head.

Suddenly she started laughing.

The laughter felt inexplicably evil.

Marvin's heart immediately dropped!

This was that damn Diggles' laugh!

Clearly, this treacherous Evil Spirit Overlord used some secret techniques to control Deceiver's body!

"I'm sorry, that Rainbow Stone is mine," he said.

Suddenly, Holy Maiden Muse cried out in alarm. The Rainbow Stone in her hand abruptly flew out due to some attracting force, and fell onto Deceiver's hand.

Deceiver then turned and ran!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 228: Angry Heavenly Deer

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

It happened so suddenly that Marvin didn't have time to react.

Diggles was controlling Deceiver with an ability clearly beyond the understanding of ordinary people. She snatched the Rainbow Stone and then disappeared in the cave.

She escaped!

'Shit!'

Marvin was worried, and the young deers were panicking. Even if they weren't clear what losing the Rainbow Stone meant, they could still feel that this was something far from good.

'I have to quickly catch up to Deceiver to stop her from opening the Disaster Door,' Marvin decided.

But there was still something troublesome, Assassin Hawley. He didn't know where this guy was hiding.

In a mere instant, this Assassin had used a high level hiding method.

Marvin felt a huge headache coming.

A 4th rank Assassin who wanted to assassinate him. He was a bit anxious.

He knew the strength of Assassins.

But something surprised him. Just as he was getting anxious, a charming voice echoed, "Are you looking for him?"

...

The tardy Madeline.

Marvin tearing the Azure Letter was to let Madeline know that something huge happened here. But things happened so quickly. It was to the point that by the time Madeline arrived, she could only casually catch Assassin Hawley who tried to escape. In fact, it wasn't that Hawley was incompetent, but during his fight with Deceiver, and then later Marvin, he had used too many of his escaping skills.

Most of these skills were restricted to a certain amount of uses each day.

Madeline met him on the way, and with a Bind skill his life was under her control.

Then, after using all kinds of restriction spells, she directly bound the Assassin and brought him over.

But when she saw the dagger stabbed in the Asuran Bear's butt, she couldn't help but laugh. "Honestly, this is the first time I saw you in such an awkward situation."

Madeline had a great time laughing.

She really enjoyed seeing Marvin in such an awkward state for the first time.

This guy's strength clearly wasn't that high, but he was able to smoothly react properly regardless of the circumstances.

It was very difficult to catch him in such a situation. Madeline seldom felt so carefree like this.

But Marvin's next words made this joy disappear. "She took the Rainbow Stone."

Madeline's expression immediately became gloomy.

"Where is she? I'll pursue!" she said decisively.

The ownership of the Rainbow Stone would decide whether or not River Shore City would face a disaster. As the Lord of River Shore City, she would obviously care the most about it.

"Hold on."

Marvin looked at the Assassin, Hawley. "First we need to settle the grudges between me and that guy."

Hawley forced a smile. "We have no grudges. To be honest, we only received money to help someone."

"Who hired you?" Marvin coldly asked.

Hawley replied back, "If I tell you, you have to let me go."

"Okay..." Marvin dragged this word.

Hawley bluntly answered, "That guy from the Unicorn clan... You should have heard, he works in the Alliance's finance department."

"If you let me go, I'll personally bring him for you. Then you can handle him as you wish."

But as he finished his sentence, a paw swiped down, directly crushing him into mincemeat!

Madeline frowned. "So violent."

"And, didn't you say 'Okay'?"

Marvin casually said, "This kind of verbal agreement has no effect. Moreover, it would be leaving a loose end behind."

"But you might miss a lot of information by doing that," Madeline said.

Marvin shook his massive body and slowly regained his regular Human-shape.

He then clenched his teeth and pulled out the dagger stabbed into his butt.

The Holy Maiden Muse turned her head away as a young deer happily skipped over and used a strong healing spell and dispelled any poison.

Madeline looked at this scene with a smile.

Marvin quickly put on clothes. "It doesn't matter, I already know the information he could give me."

He took out a golden coin from the crushed corpse. On one side of the coin was drawn a huge spider and on the other side was the number 7.

Shadow Spider 7th killer. There were still six powerhouses above him.

To Marvin, this enmity was to be met in kind. Regardless of how many people were left in the Unicorn clan or the Shadow Spider Order, he would ruthlessly retaliate.

But the top priority was still to retrieve the Rainbow Stone.

He quickly searched for Deceiver's trail.

Soon, with the help of the White Deers, he found a few of her hairs in the cave.

After he bid a simple farewell to the lovely deers and the Holy Maiden Muse, Madeline used a tool to open a Teleportation Portal and the two left the White Deer Cave, returning to the Deathly Silent Hills.

This was the location where Madeline had set up a Teleportation Portal.

The sky had yet to darken, so Marvin still couldn't use his Night Tracking ability.

But to set up the Disaster Door, one would need at least 8 hours.

As the sky would darken in roughly one hour, they still had some time.

Madeline and Marvin rode on the magic carpet, starting a simple search in the Deathly Silent Hills.

...

In the Saint Desert, countless Foul Anemones kept emerging from underground.

In the middle of that army of Foul Anemones was a White Deer neighing angrily.

These Foul Anemones were truly too disgusting. They had octopus-like tentacles and astonishing reproductive abilities.

Whenever the White Deer used a spell to annihilate a part, soon, more of them would emerge from underground.

This was well designed.

A powerful Evil Spirit had planted countless Foul Anemone seeds here in order to trap him.

Stinky tentacles kept coming over to bind him.

The White Deer Holy Spirit was thoroughly infuriated.

But at that time, his heart instinctively felt something wrong.

Through that army of Foul Anemones, he faintly caught sight of a scene.

A woman snatched the Rainbow Stone from Muse's hands!

"Rainbow Stone!"



"How could this filthy Evil Spirit dare to covet my treasure!"

The White Deer Holy Spirit came to a realization.

He raised his head and angrily roared, and frightening Heavenly Holy Power was emitted from his body, purifying this area of the desert in an instant!

Heavenly Holy Power was a power full of Order. Not only this was the nemesis of Chaos power, but it was also the natural enemy of those filthy creatures!

In an instant, the entire field of Foul Anemones was cleared off.

The White Deer Holy Spirit started sprinting toward the Deathly Silent Hills!

...

Deathly Silent Hills, in a hidden cave.

Deceiver's body was crazily convulsing. The Rainbow Stone was still in her hands, but her hands were constantly shivering.

"Build the Disaster Door."

"You'll get my reward. I'll release your brother."

"Think about it, he is your only relative in this world." Diggles' words were whispered beside her ear, as if it was a devil luring her.

But her willpower remained strong!

Her Numan blood was burning and she became more and more clear-headed.

"No. You are deceiving me."

"You lie."

She tried hard to lift the imprint Diggles put on her body.

But the Evil Spirit Overlord's command came:

"You dare to disobey your Lord's order!"

"You'll die because you violated your oath, and your soul will return to me, forever unable to escape."

She faintly moved back.

Then, a strange smirk appeared on her face.

"Diggles... Ah... Diggles. You call yourself crafty in vain."

"Could it be that you don't know what my name means?"

Deceiver.

On a throne on the Decaying Plateau, Diggles' angry and shocked roar could be heard.  
"How could this be!?"

"How could she remove my contract on her own!"

He spared no effort to search for Deceiver's trail.

But he couldn't find anything.

This was because when he used her "brother" to force her to sign the contract, the contract itself had a problem.

Deceiver, as a descendant of the Numen, the ones who drew their strength from a Devil's head, was naturally very proficient towards a contract's clauses.

Playing around the contract and faking clauses was what she was the best at.

Even the Evil Spirit Overlord didn't find any loophole.

Now he had no way to look for her!

Diggles angrily roared, "Head Knight! Douglas!"

"I have an important task for you!"

"Although Deceiver betrayed us, she left a plane's mark in the White Deer Cave! We can still make a comeback!"

...

In the quiet White Deer Cave.

After Marvin and Madeline left, the young deers and Holy Maiden Muse returned to their living quarters.

They already sent the signal for help from Lorant, convincing him to quickly come back.

As for the Rainbow Stone.

They could only hope that Sir Marvin and the Witch that suddenly appeared could retrieve it.

But suddenly a sinister and foul power quickly spread through the cave.

All the White Deers trembled.

Muse raised her head in disbelief, looking at the crack that opened before them.

A Knight emitting a nasty aura emerged from that crack.

His face was covered with moss, and was grinning at everyone, exposing a bloody mouth!

Then, screams were heard in the depths of the White Deer Cave.

But it soon returned to silence.

...

At nightfall, Marvin's Night Tracking finally became handy.

Relying on a hair, he found out that Deceiver didn't run far.

Following the red line in his field of view, they found Deceiver calmly waiting in a cave.

She was holding the Rainbow Stone in her hand, coldly looking at Marvin and Madeline.

"Do you want this Rainbow Stone?" she asked.

Marvin shrugged. "We actually have no interest in it."

"But it definitely cannot land in Diggles' hands."

"But it looks like it won't, because you are clear-headed."

Marvin felt that the aura of Diggles had disappeared from Deceiver.

But Deceiver silently shook her head, muttering, "You are wrong."

"Few people can stop Diggles from getting the things he wants."

"Even if I betrayed him, he will also..."

Her voice was abruptly cut short by an angry neigh coming from the White Deer Cave!

It was an exceptionally sorrowful voice.

That was the voice of the White Deer Holy Spirit.

Marvin's expression suddenly changed.

"What happened?"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 229: Marvin's Counterattack

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Facing Marvin's question, Deceiver sighed, "As expected, he will still succeed."

"This Rainbow Stone will definitely be his."

Marvin frowned. "What are you talking about? As long as you keep the Rainbow Stone away from Diggles, he won't have it his way."

Deceiver shook her head. "It's not that simple."

"But I don't have time to explain everything to you now."

"Let's make a deal. Tell me everything you know about my younger brother and I'll give this Rainbow Stone to you."

Madeline sneered, "Do you think you can escape from my sight?"

Deceiver coldly glanced at Madeline. "Wizard? Before you advance to Legend, these kinds of big words won't be convincing."

"I'll go where I want to. You can't stop me."

Madeline suddenly became angry and was about to act when she was pulled by Marvin.

"In fact, even if you didn't exchange the Rainbow Stone for it, I would have told you about your brother," said Marvin sincerely. "I just don't want you to be used by Diggles."

Deceiver doubtfully asked, "Who are you after all? I know you possess the same bloodline as me, but you seem to have one of those prophetic bloodlines."

"I'm not one of them, I only coincidentally know a lot of things."

Marvin quickly asked, "You and your younger brother spent your childhood in the vast western sea, am I right?"

Shock flashed through Deceiver's eyes before she nodded.

Marvin continued, "Because of an accident, you were pursued by those natives and were caught into a space-time crack during the chase. When you woke, you found yourself in the Decaying Plateau. Thus you thought your younger brother fell with you and was in Diggles' hands, right?"

Deceiver held her breath.

Marvin's words perfectly described her own experience!

"Keep going!" She asked expectantly.

"In fact, he didn't fall in the Decaying Plateau with you. He is still alive in that vast western sea."

Marvin took a long look at her. "If you want to find him, and if you believe me, you should take a trip there."

"Despite people calling that place the [Dead Area], you and I both know that the descendants of a lot of ancient races live there. Right?"

Deceiver took a slow breath.

She hesitated for a long time before throwing the Rainbow Stone to Marvin.

Marvin deftly caught it and sighed in relief.

"I believe you."

"Because we are both Numan descendants, I'll remind you that Diggles definitely won't give up."

"You'd best look for a place to hide. Because your enemy might not be the one to make a move."

After saying that, she took another look at Marvin, apparently wanting to memorize his face, before soon disappearing into the depths of the cave.

Madeline was surprised.

Even if Deceiver was just a 4th rank Sorcerer, Madeline simply didn't know what spell she used.

It was as she had said: if she wanted to escape, Madeline and Marvin simply couldn't stop her.

"Is this stone real or fake?"

Madeline looked at the Rainbow Stone in Marvin's hand. "Her nickname is Deceiver, don't be tricked by her."

"She won't trick me," Marvin said confidently.

"We should leave soon."

His voice had yet to finish when a white ray of light rushed over!

The other side's aura was extremely frightening. In that split second, Marvin and Madeline felt a bit pressured!

"Shit!"

Marvin immediately remembered Deceiver's warning. "Your enemy might not be the one to make a move."

After all, the one approaching was actually the White Deer Holy Spirit.

...

The White Deer nimbly rushed over, as fast as lightning. In the blink of an eye, he appeared in front of Marvin.

The radiance around his body spread out as he slowly turned into a middle-aged man.

"Return my treasure," demanded the White Deer Holy Spirit in a dignified tone.

Madeline held her breath. A hint of fear flashed through her eyes. She was a Half-Demon, and the other side was a Heavenly Legend lifeform, so both sides naturally disliked each other.

If the White Deer Holy Spirit was annoyed by her, he might get rid of her.

And his current mood really seemed to be bad.

Marvin composed himself and tightly held that Rainbow Stone as he said in a heavy voice, "Sir Lorant, we have no objection in returning something to its rightful owner."

"But I have to ask, what happened?"

The White Deer Holy Spirit sneered, "What happened? Do you still need to ask me?"

"Intruding in my cave, stealing my treasures... If not for you trying to protect my children once, I would have already taken them back!"

His gaze fell on the cloth bundle containing the rifle on his back.

Marvin's expression didn't change. "I want to know what happened after I left."

Lorant impatiently said, "Hand over the Rainbow Stone, don't force me to make a move."

"Don't think I don't know what you planned. You are like those Evil Spirits, people with filthy motives."

Marvin sternly argued, "We are different from the Evil Spirits. At least we don't want a Disaster Door to appear somewhere on Feinan."

"Thus, I want to know. What happened after we left!?"

The middle-aged White Deer Holy Spirit clenched his teeth.

Then, a screen of light was shot out from his eyes.

The White Deer Cave could be seen on the light screen.

He could see everything that previously happened.

Marvin carefully looked.

After Deceiver was controlled by Diggles into stealing the Rainbow Stone, Marvin and Madeline quickly gave chase.

The cave then regained its peace.

But not for long. A crack appeared in front of the young deers and the Holy Maiden!

Marvin shivered. "Plane's mark?"

The White Deer Cave originally was a place perfectly hidden. Before the Deceiver entered and left a plane's mark, even if Diggles was powerful, he couldn't find this place.

Sure enough, that crack spread and turned quite big. Ultimately, a Knight rotting all over emerged from the crack.

He pounced on the pitiful young deers.

His frightening aura made all of them lose their ability to move including the Holy Maiden Muse. All of them in the White Deer Cave were sent through the crack.

...

"Heaven..." Marvin bit his lips. "They were captured and sent to the Decaying Plateau."

'Wait!'

Something suddenly clicked in his mind, and he looked at the White Deer Holy Spirit, somewhat startled. "Diggles got in touch with you?"

Lorant gloomily nodded.

"Thus you have an agreement?" Marvin attentively watched him, "You personally hand him the Rainbow Stone and then you'll get your children?"

"More or less. I don't have a choice." The White Deer Holy Spirit's face was filled with helplessness.

"I need this stone to save my children."

"No!" Marvin categorically answered, "You are crazy."

Killing intent flashed through Lorant's eyes, "If you try to stop me, I won't hold back!"

...

Decaying Plateau, supreme throne.

Head Knight Douglas slowly walked over from the distant sea.

"Lord, everything is ready."

"They are in most secure place. No one else knows about that secret prison you built."

"No one can find them, including Deceiver," Douglas said.

A satisfied smile appeared on Diggles' face.

"Very good, I only wanted to open a Disaster Door to vent, but I didn't expect to have an unexpected harvest."



"Lorant cares a lot about his children. Apparently, even Heavenly lifeforms would lower themselves after living in the human world for too long."

"But that doesn't matter. I just happened to lack a mount."

"Wait until he arrives to the Decaying Plateau, I'll entertain him, hahahahaha..."

...

Deathly Silent Hills, in White Deer Cave.

The hostile mood had gradually disappeared.

It was clear that Marvin's admonishing was effective. Lorant wasn't a fool, but he could only agree with Diggles' deal because he wasn't left any other choice.

In fact, even he knew that going to the Decaying Plateau would lead to a disaster.

Diggles was very powerful, about the same as a small god, and the Decaying Plateau was his world. Other people's strength would be weakened there and he would be able to display his specialties with no limits.

Just as Marvin said, even if Lorant handed the Rainbow Stone to Diggles, the latter wouldn't let him and his children off.

Because Evil Spirits were always greedy and never satisfied.

"There are three days before the trade between you and Diggles."

"These three days are enough for us to make a plan."

"You must believe in my plan. You aren't fighting alone," said Marvin extremely sincerely to Lorant in the depths of the cave.

Madeline already returned to River Shore City. Lorant, as a Heavenly lifeform, didn't look kindly at Succubi.

As for Marvin, because of some special reasons, he didn't seem to mind that bit of Devil bloodline.

Lorant looked at some empty space in the silent cave and sighed, "I don't have many friends, but I still have one or two."

"But I wonder if I should drag them into this matter."

The Heavenly Deer had his own pride, and would seldomly ask for help from his friends. Marvin could see that.

"Our only goal now is to rescue your children, along with Miss Muse, isn't it?"

He handed that Rainbow Stone to Lorant. "If you really feel that dealing with Diggles is the best way, you can try to do so anytime."

Lorant pondered silently over the Rainbow Stone in his hand for a moment before asking, "We won't compromise, so what should be done?"

Marvin smiled. "We counterattack."

"Don't you think that Diggles has been too active recently?"

"I actually have many friends. They should be very willing to help put an end to a few Evil Spirits."

Lorant thoughtfully nodded. It could be seen in his eyes that he had made a decision.

"Good, we counterattack!"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 230: Golden Scissors

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

On a silent desolate plain, a violent storm rose!

The frightening destructive power engulfed everything within sight. The entire area faintly shook.

The grey storm kept whirling, ravaging everything in its path.

The originally green and lush plain was left in a mess in the wake of the gray storm.

In the middle of the storm, a beautiful woman unhurriedly ended her spell.

'The test is finally a success. New Legend spell, [Ashes Storm].'

'Time to go back and see.'

Hathaway looked over the field, seeing that more than ten meters of soil were blown away. She seemed pleased with the results.

This was just the prototype of Ashes Storm. She needed more grasp over it to make the Legend spell even more powerful.

With her specialties, [Unlimited Stacking] and [Legendary Instacast], this spell could burst with frightening power in an instant.

This time she had been hiding in her newly formed Half-Plane to research this spell.

It was time to return to Ashes Tower.

She used a Teleportation Portal to return to Ashes Tower's tallest floor.

She was surprised to see that the green fire in the fireplace was restless.

She slightly frowned, looking at the fire. It had been active for a day.

Could something have happened to Marvin?

She gently used her hands to push aside the green flames. Marvin's face was shown in the center of the fire.

"What happened?" she asked.

"Ah. You finally answered." Marvin seemed a bit fuzzy in the fire. "I planned a trip to a plane. The destination is the Decaying Plateau, interested?"

Hathaway deeply frowned. "What are you planning?"

"This isn't something that can be explained with a few words." Marvin winked. "You know where you can find me."

"Help me contact Sir Inheim on the way."

"I originally didn't plan on troubling him, but right now we really need him."

The flames started dispersing.

'We?' Hathaway was doubtful.

The final flames in the fireplace condensed into a crystal with coordinates written on it.

'Isn't that the White Deer Cave?'

Hathaway lightly scanned the crystal and her expression immediately changed.

She hesitated for a bit before hurriedly rushing out, without even changing her clothes.

...

A long while later.

Everyone was sitting around a round table. The atmosphere was somewhat strange and they were all sizing each other up.

But Marvin was calm and composed.

As the host, White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant was especially uncomfortable.

"To be honest, I really didn't expect that... You actually found four people." He forced a smile.

"How did you do it?"

The awkward atmosphere was temporarily set aside.

Everyone at the table kindly smiled at Lorant.

One of Marvin's acquaintances was sitting on Lorant's left side, the Great Druid Endless Ocean.

She had gifted a False Divinity to Marvin beforehand. The last time they met wasn't too long ago actually.

But Endless Ocean wasn't called by Marvin. She was one of the few friends of the White Deer Holy Spirit.

Another friend of his also showed up, and was sitting on Lorant's right. It was a very kind and good-natured old man.

His nickname was [Sky Fury]. Like Endless Ocean, Sky Fury was one of the members of the Migratory Bird Council.

A Legend Great Druid!

Aside from Endless Ocean and Sky Fury, the others were people called by Marvin.

...

The first was the Elven Prince, Ivan.

When this guy was informed by Marvin, he immediately rushed over to the White Deer Cave.

That guy was fearless enough to pick a fight with an Ancient Red Dragon, so why would he be afraid of an Evil Spirit Overlord?

The next one was Shadow Thief Owl.

The Legend Thief had no interest in this matter, but Marvin used something to convince him to to rush over.

The other two were the silent Monk, Inheim, and Hathaway, who seemed to be in a bad mood.

Apart from Marvin, there were seven Legends!

No wonder Lorant was a bit startled.

He could only find two Legends to help, but Marvin called out four!

Out of those, one was an old fox, one had an unreasonable strength rivalling gods, and the other two were newly risen Legends with extremely high potential.

This kind of lineup... Not mentioning just the East Coast, no one would be able to gather such a group in the entire South.

But Marvin's answer left him even more speechless...

"There should have been six. But one suddenly got busy in a hand to hand battle with the emerging Molten Overlord. He told me that he most likely won't make it on time, but I should tell him if another event like this comes up."

"And the other one also can't show up, so he sent me this."

Marvin showed off [Brilliant Purple], which he had just got a hold of.

Constantine sent a Great Eagle to deliver it. Along with it was the entire set of equipment as well as two rounds of [Dragon Tooth] and one of [Dawn Light].

Constantine couldn't participate in this trip, but as Marvin's creditor, he said that he was scared Marvin would be in trouble against Evil Spirits and die on this trip. Thus he generously handed over his beloved weapon. But Marvin knew that guy was just bad with words. The middle-aged man still cared about one of his kind.

The other one who was fighting with the Molten Overlord was naturally O'Brien.

As the Night Walker's leader, O'Brien's power couldn't be doubted. Originally, Marvin intended to call him and Hathaway.

But unfortunately he was busy. Even if O'Brien was very interested in Marvin's plan, he really couldn't come.

Helpless, Marvin could only request Hathaway to ask Inheim. He didn't expect that this Legend Monk would really take the time to help!

Inheim's strength was no worse than O'Brien's. With him, Marvin's plan would be a lot safer.

...

"Well, Ladies and Gentlemen, let's not waste time."

Marvin stood up and looked at everyone. "Thank you so much for coming here. You might already know some parts of the plan, but not everything."

"Please allow me to run you through the whole sequence of events and then we can speak about my plan."

They all silently looked at Marvin, a strange feeling floating in their hearts.

Everyone here was a Legend, except for the 3rd rank Ranger standing up and constantly talking.

This felt somewhat absurd.

But it still happened. This particularly shocked the White Deer Holy Spirit.

'I hope he is truly as amazing as he is rumored to be, and is able to help save my children,' Lorant thought in silence.

...

Marvin finished his speech twenty minutes later.

They all looked at each other in dismay. They were startled by Marvin's crazy and bold plan!

Shadow Thief Owl was the first to speak against it. "I suddenly lost all interest in this operation. Little Marvin, your invitation letter didn't talk about that."

Marvin forced a smile. "What did I say?"

Shadow Thief Owl took out of a Thousand Paper Crane and put it on the table. Shivering letters formed on it.

– Trip to the Decaying Plateau. Opportunity to get Diggles' artifact. –

"You assured me I could steal to my heart's content from Diggles' hidden treasury. Saving young deers on the way isn't an issue."

"But your plan is simply declaring war on the Evil Spirit World!"

"Do you know what you are saying?" Owl asked in dissatisfaction.

Marvin seriously replied, "I know what I said."

"In fact, if it was only about rescuing Lorant's children, I wouldn't need to gather everyone here."

"Diggles keeps invading Feinan, and he is the most active Evil Spirit Overlord. Eliminating him is like giving a warning to the Underworld."

"He did quite a few evil things these years, didn't he? What allowed him to be so rampant? Is it because the righteous aren't strong enough?"

Marvin's voice was loud and clear. "It's just that people don't wish to cooperate."

"Sir Owl, I guarantee you will have enough time to visit Diggles' treasury. As long as you follow my plan."

Owl shrugged, no longer saying anything.

Marvin looked at Ivan. The Elven Prince shrugged. "No issues here. As long as you don't want me to go near the coast, it's all good."

As for the two Great Druids called over as helpers by the White Deer Holy Spirit, they originally wanted to go to the Underworld so they naturally didn't have an issue.

Marvin's sight focused on the last two people.

Inheim and Hathaway.

The former muttered, "The plan you just mentioned is very alluring."

"If we can truly get rid of Diggles, I am very willing to make a move. But I am very curious. From where did you get so much knowledge?"

"You just mentioned quite a lot of things that even I never heard of."

Everyone's gazes once again focused on Marvin.

Indeed, for Marvin's plan to be successful, his claims had to be true.

Did he really have a method to sneak into the Underworld undetected, and more accurately, find the young deers and the Holy Maiden Muse's cage?

And did that artifact he mentioned really exist?

Marvin remained silent, only looking at Hathaway.

The latter took a deep breath and firmly spoke on behalf of Marvin, "I told him."

Inheim frowned.

"Everyone knows my identity. I know some things others don't. Isn't it normal?"

"What Marvin just said came from information I told him. But I hadn't expected him to plan something this big..." Hathaway calmly said.

Marvin could feel that all the Legends relaxed when hearing these words.

They knew Hathaway was a Seer, and that because of this, the Shadow Prince tried to assassinate her.

They had somewhat heard of the powers of Seers, so if it truly was like that, then Marvin's plan could really work out.

"So what's our first step?" Lorant asked impatiently.

Marvin, seeing that no one had any more objections for the time being, smiled.

"Our first step is to look for the [Golden Scissors]."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## **Read Night Ranger - Chapter 231: The Lake Monster**

Chapter 231: The Lake Monster

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

In the western part of Thousand Leaves Forest there was an extremely vast lake.

There was only one mountain separating this place from Ivan's previous exile location.

But even those powerful Stone Giants didn't dare to get involved with that lake.



In fact, this was a cursed area.

According to the adventurers' rumors, no one would be able to return alive from the lake. This lake seemed to have been inflicted with some kind of curse. It would devour all the lives that approached.

When the moonlight hit the surface of the lake, it would be covered in a dense pink mist.

This mist would cause all kinds of hallucinations and make people forget themselves.

The lake was called [Eye of Soro]. It was said that after the evil god Soro fell in the ancient times, his left eye fell onto Feinan, transforming into this lake, and a monster resided in the lake ever since then.

...

Three hundred meters above the lake, a huge magic carpet slowed to a stop.

Marvin and Hathaway were calmly sitting on the magic carpet.

The others had long since disappeared.

"You are really too bold," Hathaway suddenly said.

Marvin nodded.

He knew what Hathaway meant. Decaying Plateau was a name worth respecting even for Legend Powerhouses.

Diggles was an existence on par with gods.

But Marvin actually planned to destroy the whole Decaying Plateau!

Even if everyone hated Diggles' actions, Marvin's bold move still startled them.

Apart from Ivan, everyone had second thoughts.

But in the end, Marvin convinced them with the help of Hathaway.

"Why can you see more things than me?"

She took a deep look at Marvin. "I only saw the destruction, but you can see so much more."

Marvin shrugged. What could he answer when facing this question?

He could only laugh insincerely. "How could I know, there will always be some strange things going through my head."

Hathaway went silent.

Marvin saw her deeply worried appearance for the first time.

Even when she was waiting for the Shadow Prince with Inheim and the others, she wasn't so worried.

"Hey, believe me. They'll quickly get a hold of those Golden Scissors. This will be proof that the things I see are real."

Marvin gently held Hathaway's hand. "They will believe me. Following my plan, we will be able to rescue Sir Lorant's children and then destroy the entire Decaying Plateau, effectively warning the Underworld."

Hathaway's body stiffened, but her expression slightly relaxed. "I'm not worried about this."

"I'm worried about you."

"You really want to go with us?"

Marvin looked her in the eyes. "Believe me, apart from me, no one can quietly sneak into the Decaying Plateau undetected."

"The aura of a Legend is really too strong. Even if you conceal it, you'll be detected by Diggles as soon as you enter the plane. I won't."

"I am the most suitable person to rescue the White Deers."

Hathaway shook her head. "I have a bad feeling. I'd prefer if they couldn't find the Golden Scissors."

Marvin froze, stunned.

At that time, huge waves rippled through the always peaceful Eye of Soro!

A long and barbed tentacle emerged from the lake, followed by a huge silhouette!

"Turns out to be an Octopus Monster!"

Ivan's laughing voice could be heard from below.

The next second, the entire lake's surface was frozen.

After casting her spell, Endless Ocean stood by the lakeside looking at that struggling Octopus Monster and said to Ivan, "It has a name. It's called [Lumu.]"

"It was once the pet of an Ancient God, and is somewhat related to Sir Lorant."

The White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant was standing on the shore, looking at the angry Lumu with a helpless expression.

This guy really was like him. He once served the Ancient Nature God. But his arrival was different from his own. Lumu had descended for a long time, long before the Nature God fell into slumber.

Lumu had a savage nature, and hid in the Eye of Soro to evade the Nature God's search. But how could he have expected Marvin to easily find him?

A pair of golden scissors were hidden in his belly. They were the most important thing to enter the Underworld.

"Despicable Deer, you actually got so many helpers... Ugh!

A fierce pain shot through his abdomen before he finished his sentence.

A meteor penetrated his body from below, leaving a bloody hole!

Inheim then landed on Lumu's head. The tentacles thrashed around, but they were unable to make him move.

"Hand over the Golden Scissors," Inheim calmly demanded.

Lumu bellowed, "Don't even think about it!"

But he then howled in grief!

A carefree shadow grabbed one of his tentacles and sharply pulled it!

Ivan actually ripped the tentacle from the body using his full strength!

Blood started flowing as a mournful roar echoed!

...

"No matter how much you shout, no one will help you."

Marvin's mocking voice rang out from the magic carpet. "The lady at my side already arranged a three-layered soundproof barrier around the Eye of Soro."

"You won't be able to escape. The surface of the lake is already frozen."

"The sky has also been sealed, and as for your surroundings, you can take a look yourself."

"Hand over the Golden Scissors. We don't have much patience."

...

Lumu's nearly fell apart!

He had never felt this sullen in all his lifetime!

As one of those serving the Ancient Nature God, he was very impressive back when he was in Heaven.

When he came to the mortal world later, no one could stop his strength.

If he wasn't afraid of that great expert in Thousand Leaves Forest, he might have already tried expanding his influence.

But he didn't think that obediently staying in the lake and occasionally eating a few people could actually attract a disaster!

Just as Marvin said, the lake's surface had already been sealed off by Endless Ocean, and even the bottom of the lake slowly froze.

A huge eagle slowly circled the sky.

He recognized this eagle. Sky Fury! A Great Druid from the north, even more powerful than Endless Ocean!

And that Monk on his head was even more savage and shocking with his body like diamond!

The elf on the shore was rarely seen kind of elf. This guy didn't seem as robust as the Monk, but he had a frightening burst power, making him hard to ignore.

And there was still the Wizard who had yet to make a move and his old friend, White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant.

He was already surrounded by so many powerhouses. What did they plan in the end?

Lumu struggled to say, "I don't know anything about any golden scissors."

Marvin coldly said, "Pull another tentacle? Understood."

Ivan shrugged as he grabbed another tentacle and started pulling.

This move scared Lumu into repeatedly shouting for them to stop!

"Wait! Wait!"

Ivan let go.

Marvin smiled. "Mister Lumu, we actually don't have the intention to become your enemy. I know that when you stealthily descended, you had the Golden Scissors previously used by the Nature God. This thing is useless to you... It's not as important as your life, right?"

Lumu stayed silent.

After a while, he struggled to say, "If I give it to you, will you leave me alone?"

Marvin looked at the others. Everyone looked like they would listen to his decision.

He immediately nodded.

Lumu's tentacles went inside, going deep into his abdomen. After some time, a bright gold light emerged.

A very small pair of scissors appeared on his tentacle.

Golden Scissors, check.

Apart from Hathaway, they all gave a cheerful look. Marvin was really right!

...

The Golden Scissors were the Nature God's artifact.

After finding them, they let Lumu off and moved away.

The Golden Scissors were given to Marvin because he would be the one actually using them.

Once the gold halo disappeared, this pair of scissors would appear mundane, but few knew that this was an artifact able to cut through planes!

"Since we have the Golden Scissors, we can start our operation."

The group went north from the Eye of Soro into the area of the Millennium Mountain Range, which divided the North from the South.

There was a small secret passage there that led to the edge of the Decaying Plateau.

According to Marvin, by going through this passage, he would quickly find the [Moss Prison] where the White Deers were being held, completing a part of his plan.

"Good, I'll go ahead. In about three hours, you guys should make your move."

Just ahead was a small cavern. Marvin smiled and waved at everyone before unhesitantly entering.

The seven great Legends were silently standing in front of the cavern, watching as Marvin disappeared inside.

After a while, Endless Ocean lowered her head and sighed, "I hope that everything will be smooth."

At that time, a strange scene flashed through Hathaway's mind.

She saw Marvin falling into the void, falling toward the bottomless Abyss!

She suddenly opened her eyes wide, but then the illusions disappeared without a trace.

'This can't be true.'

Unconsciously, her forehead became full of sweat.

...

In some corner of the God Realms, a shadow was in the middle of cursing.

At that time, a voice echoed from the distance, directly imprinting itself into that shadow's heart.

"Glynos, I found something very interesting."

"You might have the chance to get your revenge."

That shadow shivered. "Go fuck yourself! This God is being chased by the Moon Goddess. It's already very difficult to find a place to hide. Don't cause troubles for me."

"No no no." That voice clearly carried a hint of joy when talking about Glynos' misfortune. "You can go to a place outside the God Realms to lie low."

"For example, the Decaying Plateau."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 232: March! Underworld

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"Decaying Plateau?"

The Shadow Prince's tone clearly showed some hesitation.

"I just obtained some information. The Legends we have been watching for... our old friends who have been silent for a while, apparently made a move."

"The reason isn't clear, since there is a layer of fog separating the God Realms and Feinan after all. But one sure thing is that they will go to the Decaying Plateau to deal with Diggles."

That voice seemed very tempting. " They can't possibly know that I have a secret path to the Decaying Plateau."

Glynos disdainfully said, "What secret path? The Decaying Plateau is in the Underworld where I can send an avatar at most. Inheim can restrain me too easily. After that disgrace, I won't do it a second time. When the matter of the Universe Magic Pool is settled, I'll personally deal with him."

"Don't be nervous. This time, I'll go with you."

A feminine-looking man appeared in front of Glynos.

"This is a perfect opportunity to kill the Seer Hathaway. Our position in the Gods' Assembly would rise quite a bit."

The shadow stayed silent.

...

In a hidden cave in the Shrieking Mountain Range.

A hot spring was boiling. Bamboo's eyes were tightly closed as a power from the void repaired her body.

Her previous injury had yet to be healed, but when she heard that Marvin was about to attack the Ogre Tribe, she wanted to take the opportunity to make trouble for him. But she ran into an unfathomable woman there.

Even if Daniela's strength wasn't as good as hers, their magic abilities were more or less the same. Moreover, her style was very wild, seeing through the fact that she was injured and making risky moves.

She forcefully stopped Bamboo by herself.

It was to the point that later on, after Ivan took care of that Iron Ogre, she had no choice but to retreat, waiting for another chance.

Now, that chance arrived. Even though Lady Azure was slumbering, when she woke up before, she had found Marvin whereabouts and condensed an eye, giving it to Bamboo.

This thing would give out Marvin's location at regular intervals.

'That reckless guy wants to go to a very dangerous area this time.'

The water temperature kept rising and the red color on Bamboo's face slowly deepened.

She could feel the power poured into her by the World Ending Twin Snakes!

She never had so much Divine Power before!

'This is a good opportunity!'

'These people overestimated their ability and went to challenge an Evil Spirit Overlord. It just so happens that I'll get to take care of the few who killed Lord Crimson.'

Images appeared one by one before her eyes: Marvin, Endless Ocean, Hathaway, Constantine, Shadow Thief Owl, and Inheim.

These guys... Would die!

Crash!

The hot spring's water suddenly exploded and spread everywhere.

Then, a naked Bamboo rose up.

There were countless minute holes on the cave's walls, the size of drops of water.

'My strength already rose up to a pseudo-Legend level. Even if it's only for three days, it should be enough.'

Her eyes were full of confidence.



The Underworld was the closest plane to Feinan, and the Decaying Plateau was its first outpost. When Diggles established the Decaying Plateau, it was with the intent of getting involved in Feinan. He once launched countless invasion into Feinan. And even though they ultimately failed, this left countless paths to the Decaying Plateau.

An organization like the Twin Snakes Cult naturally controlled a few secret paths and could go to the Decaying Plateau.

When the time came, she would wait for an opportunity to make her move.

Thinking of this, Bamboo felt an unbearable itch.

'Marvin... Wait for me...'

...

Marvin was alone in a gloomy cavern, progressing forward.

Compared to the South, this cavern was fairly dry, perhaps because this place was already close to the Millenium Mountain Range.

The Millenium Mountain Range split apart the North from the South, so if Marvin crossed all the way through, he'd arrive in the North.

The nameless cavern he was now taking had once been the exit of a Disaster Door set up by Diggles.

That was the second Evil Spirit Invasion. Afterwards, all of Feinan's living beings made great efforts to banish the Evil Spirits.

This cavern was also sealed by a Saint and no Evil Spirits were able to come through afterwards.

But what Evil Spirits didn't know was that this seal targeted only Evil Spirits.

The passage wasn't destroyed, and only Evil Spirits were unable to take it. Humans or other races could still freely come in and out as they pleased.

Due to the ingenious sealing method used by that Saint, even Diggles himself didn't notice that detail.

For many years, that place was forgotten and neglected.

And in the game, it was only activated by chance by a player after the Great Calamity.

After that, a major expansion released, called [Planar Adventures: First Chapter – Underworld].

It was also after this expansion that Marvin delved into the depths of the Underworld.

...

After following the tunnel for about two hours, the dry cavern reached its limit.

There was a huge door, about twenty meters tall!

On the door was hanging a firmly locked rusty copper lock.

Apart from this, a large amount of runes, spells and seals were lying above the door. Although they were some distance away, Marvin could still feel their powerful energy.

Even if a god wanted to open this door, it would require a lot of skill.

Marvin obviously didn't have such ability.

He looked to the side.

In a wall hidden by a mountain of weeds, Marvin found small man-sized door.

This small door was the true entrance.

There was also a lock on this door, but it wasn't actually locked. It only symbolically hanging there.

Marvin took a deep breath and removed this lock.

This apparently normal lock that looked a bit rusty was not to be looked down upon; as long as it was hanging there, the Underworld's monsters were unable to open the door!

Once Marvin took it down, this path would become a two-way path.

Fortunately, Evil Spirits had mostly given up on this place, or else Marvin wouldn't dare to do something so dangerous.

Naturally, the reason he was so daring was those seven Legends!

They would attract the attention of Diggles and the whole Underworld. Only then would Marvin have the opportunity to stealthily sneak in and rescue the White Deers.

He gently pushed open the door.

A decaying and rotting smell would make anyone disgusted filled the air.

This was the distinctive evil energy of the edge of the Underworld. The closer to the center one was, the stronger the energy would be.

Evil Spirits were the most filthy and disgusting beings in the universe. Most of the world's negative energies would gather in this place, giving birth to more of those lifeforms.

Living beings souls ghosts result from Order and Chaos overlapping. Evil Spirits were freaks created from negative energies.

Hate, Resentment, Jealousy, Slaughter... Every dirty emotion would hasten the expansion of the Underworld's foundation, the Evil Spirit Sea.

Thus, the Evil Spirit Sea would quickly grow in every era of war, birthing countless Evil Spirits.

And during each period of great chaos, one being at the level of an Evil Spirit Overlord would be born from it!

There were currently nineteen Evil Spirit Overlords, meaning that Feinan had experienced nineteen periods of unrest.

This didn't include that next era of unrest.

The fall of the Universe Magic Pool made Feinan's negative energies reach their peak. As a Prime Material Plane, this world's energies would be at least ten times stronger, regardless of whether they were negative.

The Evil Spirit Sea would double in size. And this time an Evil Spirit Sovereign would begin forming in the sea for the first time.

In fact, a prophecy had been spread in the Underworld for a long time:

[When gods violate their oath, the sovereign will rise from the sea, leading the Evil Spirits into Feinan.]

Marvin didn't know whether or not this prophecy was reliable because when he transmigrated, that powerful Evil Spirit Sovereign was still under the sea. The gods were busy dividing Feinan's territories. Dragons, Liches, Devils, and Demons were all aiming at Feinan.

And the few people remaining, the weak, began to follow gods. Powerhouses sought the Fate Stones, and tried to kill gods or seal them. It was a time of unprecedented chaos.

Evil Spirits also tried to invade.

Marvin didn't wish for this to happen, and though he couldn't stop the Universe Magic Pool from collapsing, he still had a way to delay the invasion of the Underworld.

That was to destroy the Decaying Plateau!

Thinking of this, he walked forward with determination.

Behind the door was a dull gray sky.

He used his Shapeshift Sorcerer's Disguise. This Disguise could not only change his appearance, but could also change his aura.

Disguise's effect was pretty high, so it should be able to deceive most of the Evil Spirits.

In the distance was a continent floating in the sky.

And in front of him was a bridge made of giant mushrooms.

Each mushroom was separated from the next by over a kilometer!

Mushroom Bridge.

Marvin took a deep breath and rushed over, landing on the first mushroom!

Without needing to use any strength, his body sank in the elastic mushroom before flying high up, soaring through the air to the next mushroom more than a kilometer away in a single jump.

Thus, Marvin jumped up and down, gradually approaching the flying continent!

...

South of the Millenium Mountain Range, time slowly passed.

"It's been three hours."

Hathaway had been slowly keeping time.

The others got up one by one and looked at the White Deer Holy Spirit.

He nodded and took out the Rainbow Stone.

"Ladies and gentlemen... Please!"

He took a deep breath and activated the Rainbow Stone.

The next second, a rainbow-colored tunnel appeared in front of them.

"There are so many of us here to beat Diggles, no need to be polite." Ivan laughed and walked up to Lorant first. "In fact, I already wanted to get rid of the tumorous Decaying Plateau, but I had no way to do it before."

Inheim approached next. This Legend Monk gave the White Deer Holy Spirit a rare pat on the shoulder, reassuring, "There are so many of us. There's no need to be worried, as Diggles should be the one scared instead."

"Let's go! Diggles would have never dreamt that there would be such a surprise dropping out of the blue!"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 233: Moss Prison

**Translator:** Translation Nation

**Editor:** Translation Nation

On the calm Decaying Plateau, Evil Spirits were performing their duties.

Diggles was dully sitting on his supreme seat, apparently thinking about something.

The guard at his side was silent. Ever since he started following Diggles, he had never seen his Overlord leave that throne, not even half a step.

He always sat there, motionless.

The throne's immediate surroundings were a restricted area. If someone dared to approach, no matter who, the only fate that awaited them was death.

The Evil Spirits weren't curious, and just obeyed. Diggles' orders were the highest command.

No one dared to go against him.

Deceiver was the first in history.

But she wasn't an Evil Spirit.

'She must be trying to find her younger brother. Even if I don't know exactly what happened, since I know this, it shouldn't be too hard to find her.'

Craftiness flashed through Diggles' eyes. He closed his eyes and tried to connect to a few Evil Spirit Envoys in Feinan when a rainbow crack tore the sky!

"White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant!" Diggles opened his eyes with a victorious smirk plastered on his face.

"You finally arrived. Welcome, welcome."

After the rainbow passage opened, Lorant was the first one who came out.

Pure Heavenly energy filled his body, and it cleaned an area on the Decaying Plateau.

This was a special ability of the Heavenly Deer!

But this ability made the Evil Spirits feel bad.

They were born from negative energies and weren't fond of the power of Order.

Diggles had a grave complexion, but even he no longer cared about Lorant's bearing.

After all, in his eyes, this arrogant Heavenly Deer would quickly be reduced to a mount under his crotch. When the time came, his heavenly holy power would transform into the purest negative energy.

Positive energy and negative energy could be changed through a ritual. And as an Evil Spirit Overlord, Diggles was obviously proficient in such matters.

"Give me the stone and I'll return your children."

Diggles showed an ugly smile.

But then, his expression stiffened.

Because someone else actually appeared out of the rainbow passage behind Lorant!

It was an elf whose potential would make others drool!

In Diggles' eyes those countless blessings on the Elven Prince's body were all the most precious blessings in the universe.

"You seem to have violated our agreement," Diggles muttered, looking at the two maliciously, "But I don't care."

"Since you came to the Decaying Plateau, I'll properly entertain you."

Ivan shrugged. "As you wish."

"But let's do without the nonsense!"

The Elven War Saint's body solidly landed on the ground and he charged toward Diggles like a bullet.

All the Evil Spirits on his way were sent flying!

Countless Evil Spirits howled in grief. Ivan alone slayed a bloody path to Diggles.

The latter looked at Ivan while laughing. "Silly Elf."

"You think you alone can beat me when I'm in my world!?"

Diggles' body shook and two doppelgangers suddenly appeared in front of the throne!

His main body was still sitting on the throne, motionless.

Ivan faced the powerful Evil Spirit Overlord without fear, drawing a longsword!

This longsword was masterfully crafted and had a unique decorative design carved into it.

Normally, Ivan would very rarely use powerful weapons because he didn't need them. But while stepping into another plane to challenge an Evil Spirit Overlord, though he didn't look concerned on the surface, he still took the strongest weapon in his arsenal!

This was the treasure his mother set aside for him before she died, which had always followed him to this day.

A god level weapon cast by the High Elves before they left Feinan, [Glorious Wind].

"Nine Elven Swords?" Diggles squinted.

"Congratulations for your guess." Ivan shrugged dismissively. "But... In fact, I took out this sword only to attract your attention."

Before his words finished, a meteor shot out from the rainbow passage and ruthlessly hit Diggles' main body on the throne.

Ivan raised Glorious Wind and fiercely attacked the two doppelgangers.

"Inheim!"

Diggles on the throne was startled and furious.

When the meteor fell down, Diggles lightly lifted his left hand and released an unending flow of negative energy. In an instant, three dark barriers took shape around him.

[Meteor Fall]!

One of the strongest moves of Legend Monks.

The red hot meteor used by Inheim carried seemingly world-ending power as it viciously smashed against the barrier.

But the anticipated explosion didn't happen. Diggles' power was bottomless. That meteor barely broke through the first layer of the barrier and was stopped by the second layer!

A powerhouse like Inheim did not even pose a threat to Diggles!

The Evil Spirit Overlord exposed a cruel smile. "Good, you actually dared to come to my world!"

"Lorant, I really want to thank you. Hahahaha!"

The White Deer Holy Spirit stood there and said with an expressionless, "You think everything is decided?"

"No... Let me tell you that today is the day you die!"

A frightening lifeforce appeared in the center of the Rotting Sea behind him.

This lifeforce strengthened and grew into to a big tree in a few instants!

"Seed of the World Tree? Great Druid?"

Diggles' expression became grave.

He could feel the entire Rotting Sea's power deteriorating.

The World Tree was such a precious treasure. With two Great Druids activating it, it kept growing.

It grew into an enormous tree, towering over its surroundings and expelling the negative energies. The entire Rotting Sea started to be cleansed!

"You dare to make a futile attempt at purifying my world!" Diggles angrily shouted.



One of his doppelgangers broke away from Ivan's attacks and fiercely rushed toward the tree and the two Great Druids channelling!

He couldn't let this World Tree's seed grow in this plane!

But then, a gale swirled up and quickly turned into a gray storm!

A woman's shadow could vaguely be seen in the storm.

Diggles' doppelganger was powerful but couldn't resist the storm's pull and got dragged into it!

Ashes Storm!

Everything would be drawn in and turned to ashes. This was the strongest Legend Spell developed by Hathaway. Even if Diggles' doppelganger was powerful, it was turned into ashes after being caught off guard!

The World Tree's seed kept growing. It actually couldn't keep it up for too long, since after all, it wasn't a real World Tree.

But it could greatly harm the Decaying Plateau for a short time, and most of all, it could restrict Diggles' power. Nothing else was as powerful there.

After Ivan and Inheim attracted attention, they immediately retreated inside the range of the World Tree's radiance.

There, they had constant healing and bonuses to their strength.

Lorant also turned back to his main body and began to use spells he was proficient in!

The Evil Spirits on the Rotting Sea had already been annihilated, and countless Evil spirits ran away like stray dogs!

And in that time, the rainbow passage closed.

Diggles coldly watched the Legends.

"Monk, Elf, Wizard, Druid, and a Heavenly Deer."

"To be frank, ever since the Decaying Plateau was established, never have so many Legends paid a visit."

"It wasn't because they weren't interested, but because they didn't dare. This place is my world, and I have endless power here."

"You have dug your own graves."

He then lifted his hand up and shouted, "Head Knight Douglas! Call my army!"

The rotting Knight appeared from nothingness and kneeled. "As you command, My Lord."

He took out a horn and blew in it.

The ground shook!

The entire Underworld began to shake, as a beckoning power echoed through all Evil Spirits' bodies.

They recklessly rushed forth from every corner of the Underworld.

A giant rose up from a distant part of the Rotting Sea and walked over.

Seeing this Giant, Hathaway's expression immediately worsened. "No good, it's a Corrupt Titan!"

"Unfortunately, our plan became more dangerous."

...

'Looks like they already made a move!'

Marvin was hiding in the darkness, watching countless crazed Evil Spirits rush east.

This was Diggles calling out the Evil Spirits.

This was his home, and he controlled this world's power. The few Legends would be very pressured when facing those countless Evil Spirits.

In fact, if Marvin didn't know that the Migratory Bird Council had a World Tree's Seed, he wouldn't have used this approach.

That temporary World Tree was the only reason the Legends were able to hold on.

This was an Evil Spirit Overlord after all. His strength was no lower than that of a weak god, and it was his main body!

Even if the seven Legends attacked in another place they might not kill him, let alone in his world!

In the Decaying Plateau, Diggles would be in an invincible position because the entire plane conveyed his power. He was a ruler of the plane!

He couldn't be killed.

Thus the mission Marvin gave them was just to hold on.

The task to destroy the Decaying Plateau was in fact to be taken care of by Marvin!

...

But the top priority was still to quickly save the deers.

From what he remembered, after the Mushroom Bridge, he had to go west of the Decaying Plateau Floating Continent while hiding from the Evil Spirit scouts.

Finally, his goal was on a rather secret tall mountain.

It was a field of variant moss!

Each piece of moss was the size of two to three people. They stuck to each other and the small cracks in between were used to lock people in.

Moss Prison.

The prison Diggles used to lock up the most important prisoners.

This place was heavily guarded, with even a 4th rank Half-Legend Evil Spirit Envoy protecting it.

Marvin took a deep breath and began to sneak closer.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 234: Luring the Tiger Away From Its Mountain

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

The Moss Prison's structure was very solid. Not only was the giant Variant Moss the best tool to lock up prisoners, they were also part of the Underworld. They were a type of lifeform with awareness.

Their perception was very high toward non-Evil Spirit lifeforms.

Even though Marvin's Disguise was very powerful, it might not be good enough to hide from the hideous Moss.

Thus, he stopped about a kilometer away from the Moss Prison.

He crawled on a meadow. In front of him was a rugged small path and to the west was the edge of the Moss Prison.

An Evil Spirit Knight rode on a Evil Warhorse, rushing past him. They were in charge of patrolling this secure area.

Of course, their presence here was only to stop the prisoners from escaping.

Outsiders? Who would believe that there would be visitors in the Underworld?

The entire power of the Underworld was transferred to Diggles to deal with the team of six Legends. Only those standing guard here didn't go.

Diggles was very crafty. Even though the Moss Prison was very secure, there would always be ways to get inside.

White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant wasn't the type of person who would give up on his children, so Diggles was convinced that there would be a force appearing there to save those young deers.

But they had yet to arrive.

He stayed vigilant, leaving the troops at the Moss Prison, and sending over an additional elite troop of Evil Spirit Knights from a small corrupt village nearby to defend the location.

This made forcefully breaking through even more impossible.

'Crafty Diggles...' Marvin thought in silence.

But he had made preparations!

No one understood Diggles more than Marvin. It was true that Diggles was very crafty, but he was also very arrogant!

Once he noticed something, he would definitely act on it.

This was how he dealt with things.

Thinking of this, Marvin gently took out the Thousand Paper Crane.

Inside this Thousand Paper Crane was the corpse of a Dragon!

But it had another use other than storage.

"You can make a move, Sir Owl," Marvin whispered quietly.

...

Feinan. Owl was the only Legend out of their group of seven that didn't go through the rainbow tunnel.

But this didn't mean he couldn't participate in the crusade against the Underworld.

Based on Marvin's plan, he didn't need to go with Lorant and the others.

The six Legends were enough to occupy the powerful Diggles. Shadow Thief Owl was to attract the last bit of his attention!

He was sitting on a stone, boredly playing with a Thousand Paper Crane.

At that time, Marvin's voice came from within.

Owl stretched, the Thousand Paper Crane disappearing in his palm.

'This young Marvin is truly comparable to his young grandfather at that time, doing some crazy things...'

"It hasn't even been a year and now I have to go fight an Evil Spirit Overlord. This Legendary Thief's luck is quite bad!" He mumbled to himself and then disappeared!

Shadow Thief Legend Ability, [Shadow Travel]!

This ability was different from the short [Shadow Dodge]. The latter could only briefly use the Shadow Plane to displace oneself in Feinan, while Shadow Travel would truly make one blend into the Shadow Plane!

Like so, Shadow Thief Owl traveled through the Shadow Plane.

In fact, he was the only one among the seven Legends able to travel to the Underworld without the help of a tool!

There were also many places where the Shadow Plane overlapped with the Underworld.

Relying on Shadow Travel, Owl was able to find a small crack leading to the Decaying Plateau and enter!

Naturally, if it was just a plan thought up at the last second, finding that gap would be very difficult. The Shadow Plane was filled with dangers after all.

But it was different for Owl. This guy had a lot of experience and had travelled across the North and the South. He also explored the Shadow Plane quite a few times.

He knew of more than thirteen cracks that overlapped with the lower planes!

Going to the Decaying Plateau was very simple.

After all, travelling from Feinan to a lower plane was a lot simpler than going from a lower plane to Feinan.

"Woosh!" His silhouette disappeared from the countless shadows.

What awaited him next was a rotting smell!

'There really was another Legend! And a Shadow Thief at that!'

On the battlefield, Diggles was only using his two doppelgangers to fight against the six Legends.

His main body was still focused on the entire plane.

When Shadow Thief Owl appeared, he was immediately spotted.

A proud smile appeared on his face. There was a limit to how long he could focus on the entire plane.

Diggles was confident that this group was only composed of Legends. Who other than Legends would dare throw their life away in the Decaying Plateau?

Thus, he only focused on auras of Legend rank and above when monitoring the entire plane.

This was most efficient.

Just as expected, Shadow Thief Owl's appearance confirmed his thoughts.

'This Shadow Thief definitely came to save those young deers, hehe...'

'How naive.'

Diggles silently lifted his hand and another doppelganger appeared!

This doppelganger's aura was a bit weaker than the other two, but it was strong enough to deal with a Shadow Thief.

At the same time, the Evil Spirit Envoy guarding the Moss Prison also received Diggles' command.

"Take most of the Evil Spirit Knights with you and surround that crafty Shadow Thief!"

Diggles' voice was awe-inspiring.

The Evil Spirit Envoy could only answer, "Yes!"

Then, a large group of Evil Spirit Knights left their posts to head towards the Shadow Thief!

Owl's next move puzzled Diggles greatly.

He actually didn't go toward the Moss Prison, speeding down another path instead.

Diggles wondered in confusion, 'Isn't he here to save people?'

'Hold on... That direction... It's my hidden treasure cave!'

'How did he know?! Damn! He is actually here to loot!'

Diggles suddenly realized. He ground his teeth and ordered his doppelganger to speed up.

And his main body was still focusing on Legend auras throughout the Underworld.

So many Legends appeared today that he wouldn't be surprised if a few more came out. He would only feel excited!

Because these Legends were doomed in this plane!

His seat held the power of the entire plane, and there was [that thing] constantly supplying him with power. How could these people be his match!

Thinking of this, he simply wanted to loudly laugh his head off!

...

Shadow Plane. Two distorted shadows quietly appeared.

"Tskk tskk, enemies are bound to meet on a narrow road."

The feminine man said in a soft voice, "Seems like you can wash away your disgrace today."

Anger filled Glynos' eyes.

In their sight, a Shadow Thief kept moving forward, and in the blink of an eye, he disappeared from the Shadow Plane.

Though they were watching, they couldn't pursue him because the Shadow Plane was distorted. They couldn't go against space-time even if they were gods.

In fact, everything was distorted in the Shadow Plane. If you stabbed an enemy here, he might still be alive in the material plane.

This was another reason the Shadow Prince didn't act.

"We still aren't making a move yet?"

Seeing Owl sneakily entering the Decaying Plateau's crack, Glynos asked with a gloomy expression.

The person at his side shook his head while smiling. "As an Assassin, your patience seems to have taken a turn for the worse after becoming a god."

"Don't forget your origins."

"That way you won't lose yourself."

The Shadow Prince coldly snorted but didn't answer.

The other's words were right. After ascending, his patience had really worsened.

He didn't have the patience he had in the past. It was replaced by crazy and eye-catching assassinations. This wasn't a matter of style, but a matter of attitude.

The pride of becoming a god made him extremely fickle and impatient.

It was to the point that he messed up after becoming the focus of the Gods' Assembly in the God Realms.

"You are right," Glynos admitted. "You are worthy of being an Ancient God. Even if you aren't much stronger than me, I can't compare with regards to your understanding of this world."

The feminine man gave a hollow laugh and a hint of dissatisfaction flashed through his eyes.



...

Moss Prison.

Once he saw the Evil Spirit Knights disappear, Marvin let out a long breath!

The plan worked!

First was the six-man Legend team attacking, and next was Shadow Thief Owl appearing to loot. Those two moves attracted Diggles' attention!

Moss Prison's defenses were now extremely low.

It was time for him to take action.

'I have to get it done quickly.'

Marvin looked at those few Evil Spirit Knights pacing back and forth at the edge of the Moss Prison and thought for a moment before ultimately entering stealth and advancing slowly.

The distance between both sides was quickly closed.

The remaining seven Evil Spirit Knights were dedicated and stood at their post.

Suddenly, the Variant Moss turned red!

Tiny particles kept rotating on the moss for a bit before ultimately pointing at a location in the surroundings.

The Knights looked at each other and then pulled on their reins, wildly rushing that way!

They were extremely fast and soon half-surrounded that place, spread in a fan shape.

The Evil Spirit Knights raised their pikes and aimed at that spot before stabbing down in unison.

How could anyone expect that the space would suddenly distort, revealing a small and innocent fairy!

Wind Fairy!

Crash! A gale started whirling, diverting the Knights' pikes. They almost knocked into each other.

Then, the Wind Fairy suddenly flew up.

Before the Knights could react, a fierce gunshot echoed from fifteen meters away!

After that gunshot, Marvin's silhouette also appeared.

Bright flames whistled out of the shotgun's barrel and covered the seven Knights!

'#4 Holy Water and a shotgun, isn't it the first time someone used this combination?'

Marvin smiled and looked at the Evil Spirit Knights collapsing under the effects of the holy power, and unhesitantly put his shotgun away.

He then went directly past the seven Knights struggling on the ground, his daggers in hand as he charged into the Moss Prison!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 235: This is worth it!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

#4 Holy Water was condensed from the purest heavenly holy power, like Lorant's.

Marvin previously lacked ranged attacks, but the Battle Gunner class made up for this.

This was the shotgun Constantine used when he was young. it had a very bad name, [Golden Rose], because the gun had a rose on it.

Sha shotguns had a big issue, which was that they had to be cooled for three minutes after one shot.

Otherwise the shotgun might explode.

This was also one of the reasons firearms had yet to become popular.

But for Marvin, this shot was already more than enough.

Using the Wind Fairy to attract the attention of the seven Evil Spirit Knights, he was able to lure them within firing range. Marvin then aimed and shot.

It simply felt too great!

...

Outside the Moss Prison, the Evil Spirit Guards angrily roared.

The loud gunshot alarmed them, causing them to run over from all directions. There were at least a thousand!

These Evil Spirits were basically the lowest level of cannon fodder. Besides negative energy, they had nothing.

But if other people wanted to eliminate these Evil Spirits, it would still be quite troublesome.

Marvin lifted his curved dagger up high and sped up!

Blazing Fury!

The frightening arcane flames wreaked havoc on that open area in an instant. The temperature of the magic flames wasn't something these Evil Spirits could endure.

The area between Marvin and the Moss Prison had gone up in flames.

A huge amount of Evil Spirits were cleanly burnt while the rest were blocked by the flames.

Marvin rushed into the fire, charging into Moss Prison like lightning!

The Variant Moss wouldn't take the initiative to attack enemies, but their defensive abilities were pretty high.

At that time, all the Moss had turned an angry red!

This meant that an enemy invaded!

But the Evil Spirit Guards had no way to catch Marvin.

The experts had been sent away by Diggles, and the Evil Spirit Overlord had focused his perception on detecting the aura of Legends in order to save energy. Under the attack of Inheim, Hathaway and the others, he didn't have extra energy to keep an eye on the Moss Prison!

The remaining Evil Spirits simply weren't a match for Marvin.

His daggers were also coated with #4 holy water.

He simply killed all Evil Spirit minions that rushed up to him inside the prison with one slash, sometimes even killing two at once!

In a mere ten seconds, Marvin had carved a bloody path through!

"Sir Marvin!"

"He really came for us!"

"Father didn't lie to us. He said Sir Marvin would come to save us!"

A huge piece of moss surrounded a dozen young deers in the middle.

They took the initiative to form a circle to surround Muse.

Marvin knew this was how they protected her.

The young deers had Lorant's bloodline so they naturally had heavenly holy power to protect themselves from being corrupted.

But Holy Maiden Muse was different, not having any power. Without the young deers protecting her, her body might have already been corrupted.

Marvin looked at that invulnerable Moss Prison and took out two scrolls from a storage item!

The Great Druid Sky Fury gave him these two scrolls after Marvin told them about the characteristics of the Moss Prison.

The two scrolls contained a powerful spell, [Great Wilting]!

Even though the moss that formed the prison was born out of negative energy as a variant plant, it was still a plant!

Withering skills were the bane of plants, and Great Wilting was naturally the moss' predator.

However, this kind of spell was something Druids would only use as a last resort.

Similarly, growing a World Tree's seed was also a last resort action.

If not to keep the balance in nature and eradicate the Underworld, even if Lorant had a great friendship with Sky Fury, he wouldn't make such a move.

In fact, these two Great Druids' actions were done without the permission of the Migratory Bird Council.

...

Taking advantage of the reprieve after clearing out so many Evil Spirit Guards, Marvin directly tore open the first scroll.

The dark black runes flashed and a large amount of black gas twisted around the red moss.

Then, that wide area of moss began to wilt.

Great Wilting was really effective.

Marvin put away the other scroll. Sky Fury gave him two scrolls only as an insurance.

In fact, one was more than enough.

The young deers cheerfully rushed out, one of them still carrying Muse.

"Many thanks Sir." Muse looked at Marvin, moved.

Marvin slightly nodded. "Now isn't the time for this. You have to immediately leave the Underworld."

"Follow my directions. Keep going that way and then you will see a big mushroom bridge."

"Trust me. Just jump on the mushroom bridge to get across, open the small door not far from it, and then you'll be able to return to Feinan."

"But you absolutely have to remember: after you return to Feinan, you have to hang this lock on the door once again." Marvin handed the lock over to Muse.

"What about you?" Muse was somewhat hesitating.

She had expected Marvin to leave with them. But hearing his tone, it look he actually was staying in the Underworld!

"I have a plan," Marvin simply said. "Take the young deers and escape!"

Evil Spirit Guards started to rush over to surround them.

Marvin didn't hesitate and raised his curved dagger once again!

Blazing Fury!

Both of his curved daggers had now used their Blazing Fury ability.

This Blazing Fury once again burnt a large area.

Marvin rode on a young deer and they crazily rushed out of the Moss Prison!

They followed Marvin's escape route and were finally on the meadow. Marvin suddenly had them stop.

He got down from the young deer, stably landing on the ground.

"You guys hurry up and follow this path. You'll see the Mushroom Bridge after a while!" he urged.

"What about you?" asked a young deer in worry. "There are still many Evil Spirits left, you can't hold them off on your own!"

"Yeah, yeah, and there is a Pool of Corruption in the Moss Prison. Those dead Evil Spirit Knights will soon be revived from the Pool of Corruption."

"They run faster than us," another deer fretted.

Marvin smiled with confidence. "I made preparations."

...

How could Marvin not know about that Pool of Corruption?

These Evil Spirit Knights were immortal. Thus Marvin didn't get any experience from them when he eliminated them!

This was because they originated from the Pool of Corruption deep inside the Moss Prison.

They would revive in at most five minutes, and would then give chase.

The young deers were pretty fast, but not as fast as the Evil Spirit Mounted Knights.

Marvin had already expected this to happen, so he could only stop in this area!

He shocked Muse and the deers by dragging a big weapon out of the meadow!

It was a big cannon!

Marvin put away his daggers and adjusted Brilliant Purple's angle, aiming at the Moss Prison not too far off!

At that time, many Evil Spirits were rushing out from within.

These Evil Spirits also came out of the Pool of Corruption.

If the Pool of Corruption was destroyed, they would also cease to exist!

'It's totally spending money to buy experience. Why do I feel like I'm one those dishonest gamers from my past life...'

Marvin took a deep breath while inwardly mocking himself for gaining exp like this, before quickly switching his equipment.

Brilliant Purple was perfectly set.

What was put in the cannon wasn't [Dragon Tooth], but [Dawn Light]!

A shot cost 1500 Wizard golds!

The Evil Spirits were rushing in a seething mass and would soon arrive in front of them.

"Sir Marvin!"

The young deers were worriedly jumping around.

"Don't... Be... Worried..."

Marvin spoke word by word as his hands were slowly pressing on Brilliant Purple, and then he suddenly pulled on the lever!

"Bang!"

The loud shot echoed. Marvin directly flew ten meters back, some blood splashing on his face!

At that time, a white light shot out of the cannon and rose up in the sky, before slowly falling.

It finally landed in the Moss Prison!

"Rumble!"

The frightening bursting sound became louder as Dawn Light completely crushed the entire Moss Prison, exploding everywhere!

Marvin rested on the ground as he checked the countless logs that appeared!

He coughed blood while crazily laughing.

It really destroyed the Pool of Corruption!

Although he was puking blood from the frightening backlash, considering his benefits, this injury was nothing!

'Even if shooting wounded me...'

'This is worth it!'

In the logs:

[You successfully destroyed the Pool of Corruption, gaining 81748 exp!]

Marvin staggered up and wanted to put away Brilliant Purple when a pure white light landed on his body.

The young deers were surrounding him, using healing spells and strengthening halos on him one after the other, making Marvin feel very warm.

These young deers were totally like a powerful nurse when together!

...

"What!"

"What happened!"

On the throne, Diggles was suddenly startled!

Marvin created such a huge commotion with that shot that if he couldn't notice it, he wouldn't deserve to be this plane's ruler!

The Pool of Corruption was destroyed, and the young deers escaped...

A series of scenes appeared in front of his eyes.

Ultimately, he caught sight of a small human struggling to hold a strange weapon and aiming at the Moss Prison.

'It's a Gunner!'

'Not even a Legend!'

Diggles' fist smashed against the throne and his expression became even more sinister. 'A little human actually dared to act like that in my world!'

At that time, Hathaway suddenly opened a Teleportation Door inside the World Tree's halo.

Under Diggles' furious glare, a person came out of the Teleportation Door.



Could it be another Legend?

Diggles was getting increasingly more enraged. That group of Legends really thought the Decaying Plateau was their backyard?

But contrary to his expectations, the person who came out of the Teleportation Door wasn't a Legend!

Rather, it was a 3rd rank Ranger!

"Damn! You actually dare to appear in front of me!"

Diggles simply wanted to explode!

He couldn't wait to dismember that human in front of him!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 236: Plague God

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Right after the explosion.

A candle was lighting the path in the damp tunnel.

It was a complex tunnel with numerous secret rooms.

Each room had strong defensive mechanisms. Though some rooms were left open, the stuff inside those wasn't as good.

This was Overlord Diggles' hidden treasure trove.

After he established the Decaying Plateau, he put all the treasures he collected from various planes there.

Shadow Thief Owl quickly progressed through this cave.

He didn't have much time to take care of the locked rooms, so he swept those open rooms clean!

Despite this, the stuff inside was still priceless.

At that moment, Marvin's voice echoed from the Thousand Paper Crane at his waist. "How is it, Sir Owl? Visiting the hidden treasury should be quite pleasant, right?"

Owl answered while still working on collecting the treasures, "Pleasant my ass!"

"Diggles sent a doppelganger after me!"

"Even though I followed your method, rushing as fast as possible to the treasure cave, while Diggles needed to use some complicated spells to enter, I still only have two minutes to steal everything! Damn it, is this the 'plenty of time' you promised me?"

On the other side, Marvin watched the White Deers leave as he shrugged. "Two minutes should be plenty of time for you, right?"

"Remember to move your hands faster, I also get a part of these treasures."

Owl couldn't help but curse, "You deceitful kid, you made this Great Thief do the most dangerous work while you sit and wait for a share!"

"I am a thief, I can only steal things. But the situation has changed, Diggles is waiting for me outside! I've already turned from a thief snatching from the shadows to a robber stealing in plain sight!"

Marvin laughed for a bit. "Congratulations on your class advancement."

"I believe that with your strength, holding back Diggles' doppelganger shouldn't be too hard."

"But if you really can't resist, strategic retreat is also part of the plan."

Owl stayed silent, apparently busy snatching some more things, ignoring Marvin.

Marvin knew that Shadow Thief wasn't a very suitable class for battle. Holding off the Evil Spirit Overlord's doppelganger would be highly difficult.

Regardless of how long he could hold him back, his part of the plan had already been achieved.

At that time, Hathaway received his signal and cast a Teleportation Door.

He unhesitantly walked in.

As a result, he saw Diggles' expression. It looked like Diggles wanted to eat him alive.

Despite having experienced countless storms, seeing such an angry expression on the Evil Spirit Overlord made his chest instinctively fill with apprehension.

But he had no intention to fight with Diggles. After being teleported by Hathaway, he jumped on the World Tree and went inside a hole in the trunk.

In the hole there was a pale yellow piece of thin leather calmly lying there.

Marvin went over and grabbed it.

It was time to implement the second part of the plan.

...

Time flew by quickly in the hidden treasure trove. As Owl put away a locked treasure chest, Diggles finally caught up to him!

He was extremely angry!

He was actually slowed down by his own defenses.

Yet he didn't know how this vile Shadow Thief managed to bypass them and stealthily enter his own treasure trove!

This was unforgivable.

"This is my domain. If you want to steal my things, you have to be prepared to pay the price!"

Diggles' doppelganger coldly glared at Shadow Thief Owl. "And the price is death."

Owl bitterly laughed. "I don't want to die."

His body then disappeared!

Diggles coldly snorted and his doppelganger also disappeared from the treasure trove.

Two minutes later in some corner of the Underworld, Owl awkwardly fell on the ground!

Diggles was invincible on this plane.

Even someone overpowered like Inheim was also unable to harm Diggles. All he could do is barely hold his own against him.

As for Owl, he couldn't even resist at all!

In a mere two minutes, he cut a sorry figure under the chase of Diggles' doppelganger!

Ultimately, a flaw appeared and he was caught, almost losing his life.

'Yup, no way I can hold that one back,' he thought gloomily.

Then, his body suddenly split into a thousand doppelgangers!

Each doppelganger fled to the Shadow Plane, using [Shadow Travel]!

As those thousand Owls fled to the Shadow Plane, a bit more than eight hundred of them were intercepted by Diggles while the remaining hundred-something doppelgangers managed to escape!

It was a big blow to his vitality.

'Damn, next time I won't listen to that bastard's sweet words!'

Owl's heart was still furiously beating as he cautiously moved through the Shadow Plane.

This was a lot more terrifying than standing against the Ancient Red Dragon!

He had the backup of many powerhouses in Tornado Harbor, and just had to play his role.

But this time he was facing the Evil Spirit Overlord's doppelganger on his own, which was too much for him!

'They should be about to start the second part of the plan.'

'That Marvin really doesn't fear death...' Owl was thinking as he continued through the Shadow Plane.

The second part wasn't related to him.

But he still wasn't relieved.

Suddenly, he noticed the backs of two people ahead of him!

Owl stiffened!

He stopped moving.

The Shadow Plane was a peculiar place where space-time was distorted. He stood there and watched those two backs.

Those two people were looking in another direction.

Owl followed their line of sight and saw a Shadow Thief blinking away.

That Shadow Thief was Owl himself!

'This is the previous me!'

Owl had a good understanding of the Shadow Plane.

He instantly understood what happened.

People were watching him, or at least that image of him, when he went through the Shadow Plane to enter the Underworld earlier.

Owl was extremely familiar with one of the two people.

It was actually that Glynos who had been humiliated by him, stripped naked!

Owl's scalp went numb.

If this was Glynos' avatar, then that other person...

'No good!'

'Marvin and the rest are in danger!'

Owl clenched his teeth and sped up, immediately returning to Feinan.

He couldn't use the Thousand Paper Crane in the Shadow Plane.

It could only be used to communicate in a material plane. As for communication across planes, even if it could be done, it would use a lot of the Thousand Paper Crane's lifespan. But he didn't worry too much about that at the moment!

"Marvin! There is a situation."

"Glynos appeared. And there is another guy. There is the symbol of the Plague God's cult on his clothes. It's highly likely that this is the Plague God's avatar!"

...

In the World Tree, Marvin heard this news and faintly frowned.

The appearance of the Shadow Prince wasn't too surprising. After all, this guy was completely humiliated by Owl last time, so he would definitely have some hard feelings.

But the Plague God's avatar appearing was a bit unexpected.

Furthermore, there was another invisible threat, Bamboo. He had already considered that this operation wouldn't escape the sight of the World Ending Twin Snakes. So

many Legends gathered in one location, and many of them were great characters that were wanted by them.

When would those enemies hidden in the dark emerge? Marvin wasn't sure.

He had prepared good strategies against them.

But the Plague God's appearance wasn't in his calculations.

He thought for a while and finally said a name to the Thousand Paper Crane.

...

Feinan. Marvin's voice came out of the crane.

After Owl heard the name, he tried to ask something, but unfortunately the Thousand Paper Crane suddenly ignited.

It turned into a pile of ashes in the blink of an eye.

Communication across planes was something that consumed large amount of energy. Even though Owl's Origami was a secret technique from ancient times, it couldn't avoid this issue.

He took a deep breath. Since things had reached this stage, he could only give it a try.

He then headed southeast!

...

On his Supreme Throne, the furious Diggles didn't move his main body at all from the start!

He always sent his subordinates and doppelgangers to fight.

But the current stalemate made him extremely impatient.

The World Tree's Seed that Endless Ocean and Sky Fury were growing really gave a powerful support to the team of Legends.

Ivan and Inheim were each fighting off one doppelganger.

And Hathaway was using a Legendary item, the Candleflame Necklace, to summon twelve Fire Elementals!

These Fire Elementals were also enjoying the World Tree's bonuses.

The Corrupt Titans emerging from the Rotting Sea one after the other were not actually real Titans. They were merely Titans' descendants that were caught by Diggles and turned into degenerate lifeforms by Diggles by using negative energies.

Their strength were far from a real Titan's strength. The Fire Elementals were able to barely contend against these monsters thanks to the World Tree's bonuses.

As for the rest of the Evil Spirits, Lorant personally took care of them.

The Heavenly Deer had many abilities and they had could naturally restrain Evil Spirits. With Hathaway also casting a large scale Legendary spell to sweep them out, Diggles' subordinates couldn't even get close to the World Tree!

Diggles was infuriated!

Although his other doppelganger was quickly rushing back, the longer this dragged on, the worse he felt.

If these guys came to conduct a rescue, then their purpose should have already been accomplished.

So why hadn't they tried to leave yet!?

Diggles was no fool, and he felt a bit worried.

At that time, that Ranger who hid in the tree hollow came out and stood on a branch of the World Tree.

His eyes rested on Diggles' Supreme Throne!

Diggles' heart sank.

Even if this didn't feel logical, he still had a bad premonition.

Could they have already figured out the throne's secret?

...

"Ladies and Gentlemen, Sir Owl just sent me some news. The Shadow Prince and Plague God's avatars are peeping on this battle."

"I don't know how many others are watching from the sidelines, but we have to act fast."

Marvin adjusted his breath and said with an extremely calm tone.

"Time to make a move!"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 237: The Throne's Secret

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

In fact, Marvin already knew. And this was the core of the second part of his plan.

Why had Diggles never left his throne?

Because if he did, he would expose his biggest flaw!

If this flaw was exploited by Marvin, Diggles and his Decaying Plateau would be completely destroyed.

But to do this, he had to make Diggles leave his throne, or at least move it a bit.

Even if it was just a little bit, Marvin would have an opportunity.

...

The Legends' hearts sank when they heard Marvin.

Marvin had warned them to expect the Shadow Prince. But they weren't prepared to fight any other gods!

Especially the Plague God, who was an Ancient God. Although his strength was relatively weak, he had many ancient Divine Spells.

Even if it was an avatar, it would still be very troublesome to handle.

But no matter what, since they had already come to the Decaying Plateau, everyone was ready to fight to the end!

"Go!" Inheim was the first to react to Marvin's words, sending a heavy punch at Diggles' doppelganger.

They all nodded.

The most important moment had arrived!

Ivan and Inheim instantly disengaged from their opponents and used their formidable burst power to get past them!

They avoided Diggles' doppelgangers and aimed at his main body!



'They really knew!'

Diggles' mood was terrible!

His main body definitely couldn't leave the throne, and the throne couldn't leave this spot!

He clenched his teeth, having his doppelgangers rush back to him. Suddenly, a dragon chant echoed through the Underworld!

To the shock of Diggles and the countless Evil Spirits, Sky Fury, who had been silently pouring magic into the World Tree, erupted!

He left Endless Ocean and leapt high in the air.

His body changed multiple times. In the blink of an eye, the Underworld lost a Great Druid, but gained a huge Bronze Dragon!

This was Sky Fury's ultimate Shapeshifting skill, Bronze Dragon.

Bronze Dragons were also powerful and wise like Copper Dragons, very different from the evil Chromatic Dragons.

The Bronze Dragon swept down and used his Dragon Breath, ending who knew how many Evil Spirits.

At the same time, it also stopped a doppelganger in its tracks!

The Bronze Dragon grabbed it directly and began the most primitive kind of melee battle!

The World Tree was now handled by Endless Ocean alone causing the pressure on her to sharply increase.

Hathaway and the White Deer Holy Spirit kept clearing away the surrounding Evil Spirits.

The roiling ashes kept swallowing countless Evil Spirit powerhouses and ruthlessly ended them.

Diggles could only condense a maximum of three doppelgangers. One was hurrying back from the treasure vault, the second was tangled with the Bronze Dragon, and as for the third...

Ivan didn't turn around as he directly threw his Glorious Wind back!

He recited a strange and difficult incantation out loud.

Then, Glorious Wind began to twist and turned into a copy of Ivan!

This was the strongest secret of one of the Nine Elven Swords!

Glorious Wind transformed into a copy of Ivan with about 90% of his strength, more than enough to stall that third doppelganger.

Thus, Diggles' main body was about to face the Elven War Saint and the Legend Monk challenging him to a melee fight.

...

In an instant, Ivan and Inheim, one left and one right, arrived above the throne!

While feeling extremely gloomy, Diggles condensed a large amount of negative energy on his body.

He was gathering the energies of the entire plane!

He condensed the same three-layered barriers from before. He didn't believe these two mortals would be able to break his barriers!

After all, Inheim's Meteor Fall had only been able to destroy one barrier!

But everything that followed was totally out of his expectations!

Ivan and Inheim didn't attack. Instead, many coils of ropes suddenly appeared in their hands.

It was no ordinary Wishful Rope, but an extremely tough and durable one mixed with fine gold, called [Prisoner Rope].

Rumor was that the High Elves used it to imprison Ancient Giants!

The two caught Diggles' off guard and before he knew it, the Prisoner Rope already surrounded the entire barrier around the throne!

'What are they planning!'

Diggles angrily made a move. His frightening power condensed into two pure fists, one going left and one right.

Ivan and Inheim nimbly dodged.

The next second, the two ran away in the same direction while pulling the rope!

But rather than forcefully pull, they chose another method.

'Pulling me off my throne?'

'Such a joke!' Diggles felt like laughing.

These two guys were definitely brainless! To try to drag him away with their strength?

But the next second, Diggles turned green!

The two ran for some distance while increasing the rope's length! The rope tied around the throne split into several as six shadows began to gradually condense!

Someone else had come!

Diggles couldn't help but curse. Today's Decaying Plateau was unusually lively.

He wanted to stop them from entering, but he found out that the other side didn't come through a space-time crack.

This was a Summoning skill.

Ivan had his right hand on his chest as he chanted in a low voice.

The six shadows as tall as mountains each grabbed one of the messy ropes and wrapped it around their hands in circles.

This truly frightened Diggles!

Stone Giants!

It was actually six elite Stone Giants!

"Long time no see." Ivan smiled proudly.

He wasn't just a freeloader in the Stone Giant territory!

Before he left, the Stone Giant Leader gifted him a summoning badge. Regardless of where he was, he could summon six elite Stone Giants to help him.

"Please, get that guy down from his tattered chair!" Ivan shouted.

The Stone Giants slowly nodded.

They moved in one direction, slowly pulling on the Prisoner Rope with all their strength!

"Krrr!" To Diggles' disbelief, his throne moved one centimeter to the right!

One centimeter was enough.

Everyone looked below the throne.

What was the secret under the throne?

...

"We should make a move!" The Shadow Prince grew more and more impatient. "I don't know what secret is hidden under Diggles' throne, but it looks like the humans have the advantage."

The Plague God hesitated. "It's better to wait, Diggles has yet to go all out."

"Let's first take a look at what's under that throne!"

Glynos could only helplessly restrain his temper and watch.

...

Despite only moving one centimeter, a strong change appeared under Diggles' throne.

A strange halo was emitted from below.

That was a hole with a vortex within.

Inside that hole was an unknown world and apart from Diggles and Marvin, no one knew this world's secret.

No one knew that as the Overlord of the Decaying Plateau, Diggles had actually linked his own plane with the World Tree!

He drew power from the World Tree to let the Decaying Plateau mature and grow stronger, and for that, he took many risks. In any case, the Ancient Nature God had already been slumbering for a very long time, so no one was taking care of the World Tree.

As long as he subdued this entrance, it was absolutely safe, and he could enjoy the World Tree's power up till the Ancient Nature God awakened.

And by that day, his power might already be stronger than the other party's. His ambitions would have long since been achieved.

When the time came, the whole universe would be serving under his foot.

He thought that no one knew of his plan, but because of Marvin's appearance and a bit of carelessness...

The moment the throne moved, Marvin made his move!

He wore the previously prepared Time Molt and disappeared.

With the help of this artifact, he directly drilled in!

Diggles was once again startled and furious as he saw this. He hadn't thought that this seemingly weak Ranger was actually the key of the enemies' plan!

The Shadow Prince and the Plague God were also stunned!

They hadn't thought Diggles would be so daring.

He had actually peeled off the Decaying Plateau from the Evil Spirit Sea and then grafted it to the World Tree, thus drawing power from the World Tree secretly!

It was true that this kind of method would increase the Decaying Plateau's plane strength, but this was extremely dangerous.

Because the World Tree was part of the Ancient Nature God's domain, and the Ancient Nature God had an artifact called Golden Scissors!

...

Success!

All the Legends were happy about it!

Even Inheim who usually never smiled was also smirking.

Him and Ivan attracting Diggles' attention was Marvin's plan.

Even a god's attention would be limited. It becomes difficult to focus on other things when you are already focusing on what you believe to be the greatest threat.

Then the six elite Stone Giants had suddenly appeared.

Their goal was to move Diggles' throne, even if it was one centimeter!

And this one centimeter was enough to ruin Diggles and the entire Decaying Plateau!

"AAAH..."

Diggles loud roar echoed throughout the entire Decaying Plateau!

He felt an unprecedented threat. He couldn't enter the vortex because only those who had the Ancient Nature God's token could enter!

Marvin held the Golden Scissors.

Everyone else couldn't enter!

He was already going crazy!

"If I have to wait for my destruction, then don't you think of leaving here alive!"

In an instant, the world turned dark!

The entire plane began to rapidly heat up, to the point of melting!

Diggles walked down from his throne!

"No good! He is going to fight with his life on the line!" The White Deer Holy Spirit loudly reminded, "We should retreat!"

The Rainbow Stone suddenly blossomed with seven-colored light and opened a planar passage.

They all planned on withdrawing, but suddenly, a forceful power emerged out of nowhere and cut the passage created by the Rainbow Stone.

It was Divine Power!

The Plague God chuckled as he left the Shadow Plane.

"Diggles, I never thought we would be cooperating one day."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## **Read Night Ranger - Chapter 238: The Fall of a World!**

Chapter 238: The Fall of a World!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Plague God!

The six Legends slowly retreated, forming a defensive perimeter in front of the small World Tree, cautiously watching the hysterical Diggles and the Plague God who had so suddenly appeared.

That guy actually used his Divine Power to sever the rainbow passage.

This was the ability of an Ancient God.

Diggles coldly watched the Plague God. As an Evil Spirit Overlord, he clearly didn't have a favorable opinion of gods.

But in the face of that small team of Legends, he would rather cooperate with the Plague God!

"We have the same goal, don't we?" The Plague God looked at Hathaway among the Legends while smiling. "Before they are dead, we won't be enemies."

Diggles was silent. At that time, his third doppelganger finally arrived.

The three doppelgangers and his main body completely surrounded the small World Tree.

And the Plague God was coldly looking at Hathaway from the sidelines. His target was clear!

He wanted to deal with this Seer while she was on this plane!

This would greatly increase his position in the Gods' Assembly.

'What can we do?'

That question flashed in the Legends' hearts.

The Rainbow Stone was able to open a path to Feinan, but they couldn't use it because of the Plague God!

And even if the small World Tree could support them, it wouldn't last forever.

It would at most last for only a little while longer.

What's more, Diggles' main body already left his throne, as there was no point in him guarding it anymore. The six Legends' odds weren't good.

Retreat? They had no way out.

Their only hope now was Marvin!

"This is unexpected." Lorant shook his head. "Sir Plague God, why are you associating with the Evil Spirits?"

The Plague God chuckled. "Lorant, long time no see. I have no enmity toward you. Only toward that Witch, I have a bit of a grudge to settle with her. If you hand her over, I swear I won't get further involved in this matter."

"You can fight with Diggles to your heart's content."

Hathaway's complexion blanched.

She already knew that she had attracted the attention of the Shadow Prince, but she hadn't expected that even the Plague God was interested in her.

These gods were all itching to get rid of her.

But she wasn't scared. Marvin had suggested that she should sit out this time, yet she still insisted to come.

Since she came, she would fight.

What's more, since that guy said he had a way, he would definitely have a way!

Hathaway's eyes were filled with resolve.

...

"We won't give up on anyone."

Inheim took a step forward and coldly glared at the Plague God. "Even if I'm the only one able to escape today, your power in Feinan will suffer a huge blow."

'What about that sneaky guy?' Hathaway thought. She then suddenly yelled, "Careful!"

A shadow suddenly appeared behind Inheim!

Glynos' expression was extremely sinister.

"You still think you can escape? Only by relying on your pair of Void Boots?"

"Do you think this is Feinan? I can only display a third of my strength there!"

"But this place is a lower plane, so enjoy it, Inheim!"

The other Legends wanted to give a hand when Glynos' voice resounded, but it was already too late.



His Nightfall directly pierced the Monk's back!

Inheim had an expression of complete disbelief!

The Shadow Prince sneak attacked him and he didn't notice him at all!

"I'm very sorry, I tricked your perception." The Plague God was still keeping his trademark smile as a brown shadow had appeared behind Inheim without him noticing.

This was the Plague God's Divine Spell, which could substantially reduce a Monk's perception.

All he did was simply cover up the Shadow Prince's sneak attack.

...

"Fuck off!" Ivan angrily rushed over.

Succeeding in his attack, Glynos sneered and disappeared.

Inheim's heart had been pierced by [Nightfall]. He was dying!

Even though he had long since ceased to be mortal, and his body had no vitals, he was still left on the brink of death by the Shadow Prince's sneak attack!

"Ivan, come back quick!" Endless Ocean loudly called.

Ivan grabbed Inheim and quickly returned above the small World Tree.

"Backs against the small World Tree! He cannot launch a sneak attack from inside it!" Endless Ocean reminded them.

They had heavy complexions. Despite there only being three opponents, two of them were low god powerhouses!

Moreover, there was also Diggles' main body.

The Shadow Prince was hiding in the Shadow Plane to sneak attack, and the Plague God, this smiling bastard, was the most frightening!

He could silently put curses on people, making them unable to resist an attack.

"Miss Hathaway, your existence is a mistake."

The Plague God slowly extended his right hand and pointed at Hathaway as he gently declared, "You should die."

Boundless Divine Power suddenly condensed.

Hathaway looked at this Divine Power in horror. The Plague God was definitely using a frightening Ancient Divine Spell!

What could be done?

Among the six Legends, the strongest, Inheim, was already on the brink of death. The straight dagger Nightfall inflicted a large amount of curses on his body. For him to be able to stay alive thus far was already a wonder!

Lorant and Endless Ocean tried to dispel the curses on his body, but it had nearly no effect.

Diggles moved forward from all directions, resolutely setting foot in the World Tree's halo.

He intended to go all out!

"Go." The Plague God faintly smiled.

A dull gray light shot out of his fingertips, completely locked on Hathaway!

'I have to stake it all!' Hathaway clenched her teeth and firmly thought of using a Legendary Spell she had yet to finish researching to block that attack.

Suddenly, the entire Decaying Plateau shook severely!

"Aaaaaaah!"

Diggles couldn't help but howl in grief. He seemed to be in extreme pain, his main body and his doppelgangers all kneeling on the ground!

Then, countless cracks appeared on the Decaying Plateau.

The dull gray light shot by the Plague God was swallowed by a crack that suddenly appeared.

"This is..."

"That kid!"

"How could it be so fast!"

The Plague God suddenly shivered. That kid managed to find the Decaying Plateau among all those boundless leafy branches?!

This was something impossible even for gods!

But regardless of how unimaginable he thought that was, the entire Decaying Plateau truly showed signs of collapse!

The sky was also showing signs of collapse.

"No!"

"Nooooo!"

Diggles bellowed toward the sky, but it was too late.

...

What Marvin saw after going through the vortex was a tree spanning the whole multiverse.

This was the real World Tree. This place was the domain of the Ancient Nature God and apart from him, no one could enter.

The World Tree took root in Feinan and they extended downward through Feinan Continent. The God Realms as well as the lower planes were leaves on leafy branches.

Each leaf represented a plane.

The Ancient Nature God had a treasure, the Golden Scissors.

The Golden Scissors were formed naturally. Rumor was that before the World Tree was born, there were twelve scissors.

Before going into a slumber, the Ancient Nature God already used ten of them.

This was the eleventh.

Indeed, cutting a leaf was equivalent to cutting a plane, and each of the Golden Scissors could only be used once.

In front of the huge World Tree, Marvin could feel the peaceful surroundings.

This was actually the real World Tree.

Those Druids from the Migratory Bird Council thought the small part growing in Feinan was the World Tree. But in fact, it was only a leafy branch of the World Tree passing through Feinan.

There were still many branches in Feinan's surroundings and each of them represented secondary planes.

They were absorbing nutrition from the World Tree as they kept growing.

As for the Nature Leaves who could teach spells to Rangers, it only grew on a special branch.

That was the World Tree.

This huge tree in front of Marvin was the World Tree supporting the entire multiverse.

It was said that even the Ancient Nature God himself didn't fully grasp all the secrets of this World Tree.

He once ridiculed himself, saying he was only an arborist in charge of pruning branches.

...

Marvin followed the twisted roots and soon arrived at that leaf.

Despite it being small, its ash-black color made it distinguishable from the others.

This was Diggles' Decaying Plateau.

That guy had recklessly grafted his own plane to the World Tree.

Unfortunately, this had some consequences. If someone had the Golden Scissors, they could cut down that rotten leaf!

Marvin took a deep breath and then bent down.

The Golden Scissors glistened in the darkness of the void.

The next second, the scissors cut across that leaf!

Snap!

A third of the leaf was cut.

'Quite tough...' Marvin firmly held the Golden Scissors and sent some more power!

...

"This world is going to fall, we have to leave immediately!"

Feeling the changes of the entire plane, Endless Ocean reminded everyone.

"Leave? You are thinking of leaving?"

Diggles who was in extreme pain watched the six Legends with red eyes. "I want all of you to be buried with me!"

The rainbow passage opened once again, as Lorant's face paled, preparing for a final battle.

But the tunnel was instantly closed by the Plague God!

"Sorry, you can't run away."

The Plague God sneered, "I want you to die with that guy."

Then, he and Glynos disappeared in the Underworld!

They didn't leave, and were in the surroundings, making sure those six Legends couldn't return to Feinan!

"Let these foolish mortals perish together with the Decaying Plateau!" The Plague God was floating in the air while smiling.

But then a smooth voice resounded in their hearts. "Glynos, Ann Maria, long time no see."

The Shadow Prince and the Plague God glanced at each other, and their bodies couldn't help but shiver out of fear!

Then, a huge shadow quickly descended.

The two gods were like ants in front of that newcomer.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 239: Plane Destroyer

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"You... You dare to leave Feinan!" The Plague God turned his body and forced himself to stay calm.

Losing an avatar would be quite painful, but with how things had developed, he couldn't do anything about it.

What surprised him though was that this huge silhouette in front of him actually dared to leave Feinan, dared to leave the protection of the Universe Magic Pool!

"What's wrong? Is it because I haven't gone out in many years?"

A handsome man slowly walked out from the middle of the huge shadow.

Great Elven King.

He wasn't wearing a crown this time. He wore simple clothes, but for the two gods, he was emitting endless pressure.

"What's more, what happens under that layer of fog is always unexpected," the Great Elven King slowly said.

The Plague God and the Shadow Prince glanced at each other, and then the two silhouette immediately disappeared!

They split up!

With this monster appearing, they could only run away!

Nicholas wasn't surprised or angry. He only firmly looked at the stunned Ivan and softly sighed.

His expression while looking at Ivan was full of emotions for the first time, but Ivan still couldn't understand what his father's expression meant.

The next second, the huge shadow behind Nicholas suddenly moved.

Its hands flew to both sides of the void!

...

"Damn!"

"That fog suddenly appeared without warning, we can't see anything."

In the God Realms, countless gods were spiritedly discussing.

In fact, ever since Marvin started to cut that World Tree's leaf, the gods in the God Realms sensed something!

All the gods had high Perception. Even if they weren't like the Ancient Nature God who could work on the World Tree's branches, they could still notice some things.

Thus they immediately found the source.

A small team of Legends attacked the Decaying Plateau, Stone Giants pulled Diggles' throne, and a young mortal entered the vortex...

These shocking events happened right under their noses.

And Marvin's move shocked these gods even more!

An insignificant mortal who wasn't even a Legend actually dared to do something like that?

He destroyed a plane! That guy's courage and temperament didn't match his strength!

Some smart gods tried to find knowledge on Marvin.

But they were surprised to find that they could only get surface information about Marvin.

They could only find rumors about him from Feinan's inhabitants.

They wanted to use divination type skills to learn more about him, but they were blocked by that vile fog.

This was strange.

But for the Gods, the one they felt they had to pay more attention to was still Hathaway.

This was currently the only Seer they had confirmation on in Feinan. In the various gods' eyes, this operation was highly likely planned by the Seer Hathaway. And Marvin was only a young guy used to draw attention.

He was only an insignificant mortal after all.

There was too much of a gap between Legends and non-Legends after all.

Mortals beneath the Legend rank were mere ants in front of gods. As for Legends, they had already more or less evolved to a rabbit that could bite.

As for some of the peak existences above Legends, even the gods were forced to admit that they were already qualified to fight them.

...

When they saw the Plague God and the Shadow Prince's avatars descending, they were looking forward to a show.

After all, even if those guys' fighting strength was only average among the gods, they could display pretty good strength in the Underworld. Along with the hysterical Diggles, eliminating this team of Legends shouldn't be a problem.

Who could have thought that as the Plague God Ann Maria kept interrupting the Heavenly Deer's portal, their view would suddenly get cut off!

It was that hateful fog once again!

The gods were in a bad mood.

This fog seemed to be lingering between Feinan and the God Realms and would occasionally appear. Even their perception couldn't see through it.

It had conveniently appeared after the disappearance of the Wizard God.

The fog apparently emerged each time something important was happening.

"What's happening in the lower plane?"

"How about we condense an avatar to check?" a few gods whispered.

"Stupid, do you want it to be buried with Diggles' Decaying Plateau?" A cold voice echoed among the God Realms.

The Dream God.

He deeply said, "Something like the fog can obstruct our sight, but it is unable to block our brains."

"Someone is going to suffer."

...

Underworld.

Because of the Great Elven King's appearance, the situation changed once again.

The shadow behind him was extremely powerful and managed to block Diggles' attack on its own.

And those two hands that rushed toward the void soon returned!

In the left hand was Shadow Prince Glynos.

In the right hand was Plague God Ann Maria.



"You can kill our avatars, but you won't be able to stop fate!"

"Nicholas, even if you are powerful, you can't resist the gods!"

The two yelled in frustration!

"Noisy," the Great Elven King calmly dismissed.

Then the two hands lightly clenched.

"Bang!"

"Bang!"

Two sound echoed as the gods' avatars were popped by the Great Elven King.

Popped!

Even if the Legends couldn't see clearly that shadow behind Nicholas they felt sincere reverence!

One man could block Diggles and easily kill the Shadow Prince and Plague God's avatars, alone.

How powerful was that!?

But they also thought of something: If he was so powerful, why did he always stay in the Thousand Leaves Forest and almost never leave?

But they didn't have time to think too much about it.

Diggles' crazy roar echoed.

He already felt very desperate!

He wanted to bury them with him, but was ruthlessly denied by the Great Elven King.

Under the effects of the plane's power, the small World Tree started to wither. Sky Fury and Endless Ocean were unable to stop it.

"Let's go," Nicholas said.

Before they could react, a huge hand wrapped around them.

The world abruptly spun, creating a space-time distortion!

They returned to Feinan from the Decaying Plateau in a split second!

The first person that appeared in front of them was actually Shadow Thief Owl.

"Are you okay?" Owl saw the dying Inheim and was startled, not sure what he should say.

This Legend Monk was their strongest guy!

"Take him to get treated. The Migratory Bird Council's Mother of Creation should be able to deal with the curses on his body."

"Welcome to Thousand Leaves Forest." Nicholas said those few sentences, turned and walked away. He soon disappeared in the depths of the forest.

A few Elves were waiting on the side to wait upon them. Among them was Ivan's old acquaintance, Ollie.

"The Great Elven King is really as unapproachable as the rumors say," said Owl with a bitter smile. "When Marvin told me to go look for him, I doubted whether he would make a move or not..."

Hold on!

They all froze.

"Didn't we forget someone..." White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant said with difficulty.

"Marvin!" Hathaway suddenly raised her head.

Then, an illusion appeared in Feinan's sky!

All of Feinan's living beings could feel their hearts beating faster.

This feeling was similar to what happened through the East Coast when Anthony died, but this time, it happened throughout Feinan.

From the East Coast to the western Dead Area, from the White River Valley to the northern cities.

The entire continent's intelligent lifeforms lifted their heads in shock.

An illusory scene was displayed in the sky that they wouldn't be able to forget for the rest of their lives!

They saw a youth completely focused on the Golden Scissors in his hands working hard to cut a rotten leaf!

They could see an unfathomably huge tree, and everyone who saw it was filled with reverence.

But what made them feel strange was that the leaf was actually really tough. The youth was using all his strength but could only cut it bit by bit!

Suddenly, more information filled their brains.

They understood.

Countless patterns were reflected on that leaf, the Evil Spirit Overlord's roar, the countless Evil Spirits running about...

And above that leaf was an emerald leaf full of vitality. Countless people were reflected on the leaf, hurrying about.

That was Feinan.

This strange scene spread through the entire continent. Some people thought they saw a miracle and thus kowtowed.

Some believed it was an hallucination.

And many more thought of those old hero stories.

Among those stories, such an event would happen when the greatest hero protected Feinan from the evil entities trying to invade it!

...

Rocky Mountain.

On the tallest Mountain Peak, three purple-haired sisters were standing shoulder to shoulder, dazedly looking at this scene.

"Marvin..." Kate whispered.

"You know him?" asked the woman with an heroic aura in surprise. "I've never heard you mention him."

Facing her older sister's question, Kate didn't know how to answer.

After a while, she said, hesitant, "We had some contact. He should be a good man, kind-hearted."

"Kind-hearted," the woman sneered, "Do you know what he is doing right now?"

"He is destroying a plane! A Plane Destroyer, tskk, how could it be related to being kind-hearted?"

Kate was speechless.

At that time, the youngest girl interrupted, "But I think he is very handsome."

"He is obviously weak, but he still managed to do something so world-shaking. Doesn't that make him handsome?"

The little girl opened her adorable eyes and looked at her two older sisters.

The two were speechless. After a long time, the eldest patted her younger sister's head and said unwillingly, "Well, I have to admit that he has some courage."

"In that case, should I put him on my fiancé list?"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 240: Astral Beast!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

White River Valley. Everyone was looking at the scene in the sky, astonished.

"Heavens, isn't that our Overlord Marvin?"

"Lord Marvin became a god?"

"How did he go to the sky!"

Ordinary people simply couldn't know what happened.

They only foolishly looked at Marvin's face in the sky.

Anna and Wayne were also extremely shocked.

"Brother... What is he doing?"

Even though he was a Seer, Wayne also didn't understand Marvin's actions.

Suddenly, his heart skipped a beat for no reason!

"No good! Brother is in danger!" Wayne abruptly said.

"Danger? What Danger?" A gentle voice could be heard behind him.

Daniela.

The future Ice Empress slowly walked over and leisurely looked at the sky while mumbling, "That guy really... Making such a commotion."

"What kind of method did that guy use to go up the World Tree..."

"That isn't a place just anyone can visit. There probably won't be any danger for Marvin."

Wayne's expression relaxed somewhat.

"Really?"

"You have to trust me, Wayne!" Daniela confidently pinched his cheek, making his face redden.

"Furthermore, you have to believe in your elder brother. He is the most unpredictable person I've ever met. Since he dares to do something like that, he certainly made proper preparations."

"If you have questions, wait for his return."

Anna had a strange feeling as she listened to Wayne and Daniela's discussion.

'You must return safely,' she prayed silently.

...

There were endless debates throughout Feinan about the appearance of this strange scene.

Marvin was still working hard at cutting that rotten leaf from the World Tree!

Destroying a plane wasn't easy.

Not everyone could hold the scissors and cut away the Decaying Plateau.

The Golden Scissors were an artifact, and the minimum requirement to wield them was to have a Divine Fragment.

And Marvin had that Divine Fragment from the Crimson Patriarch, thus fulfilling the requirement.

Even so, cutting off a plane was different from cutting off a leaf.

When Diggles grafted the Decaying Plateau to the World Tree, he made a lot of preparations and protective measures.

This made it very strenuous for Marvin.

In no less than half an hour, he cut about three quarters of the base of the leaf.

And he had been sweating for quite a while!

'Damn! Seems like the World Tree had already linked with the Decaying Plateau. During that game trailer, the Ancient Nature God used the Golden Scissors and with one snap, a world fell. It looked so easy.'

'Why does this Lord have so much trouble!' He felt a bit annoyed.

But Marvin knew that his strength couldn't be compared with the Ancient Nature God's.

He was able to cut three quarters so far simply by relying on the effect of the Golden Scissors.

If it was another plane, even a common secondary plane, the Golden Scissors wouldn't work!

He couldn't even open a hole in Feinan.

The Decaying Plateau originated from the Evil Spirit Sea, allowing Marvin could take advantage of this to separate it.

'[Plane Destroyer], I never had this title before.'

'With the fall of Diggles and this outpost of the Underworld, a lot fewer innocents would die during the Great Calamity.'

Marvin thought of this and then sighed, before going back to work.

In his eyes, Diggles and his plane had long been doomed to destruction.

The entire Decaying Plateau was already tilting downward from the gravitational pull of the Void.

Once Marvin cut the Decaying Plateau, Diggles couldn't do anything to reconnect it to the Evil Spirit Sea, and under the pull of the Void, Diggles and millions of Evil Spirits would perish!

They would enter the ice-cold Void and would never be able to return.

This was the terror of the Void.

...

Thousand Leaves Forest.

The group of Legends was watching Marvin's actions nervously.

Inheim had already left for the north with the help of Sky Fury, seeking the help of another Great Druid, Mother of Creation.

The others spent a lot of energy in the battle, but weren't injured.

"We need a way to bring Marvin's back!" White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant said resolutely. "He won't be able to return from the World Tree on his own."

"But what can we do?" asked Endless Ocean helplessly. "Your Rainbow Stone already stopped working."

Owl stayed silent for a moment and then vanished.

After a moment he reappeared and said in disappointment, "The Decaying Plateau doesn't overlap with the Shadow Plane anymore."

"I can't enter the Decaying Plateau, I can't bring Marvin back."

They all looked at each other in dismay. No one had expected this outcome.

Originally, the plan was for Marvin to quickly cut the leaf before returning to the Decaying Plateau to leave with everyone.

Such unexpected variables had come up.

The Plague God's appearance almost wiped out the team of Legends, and Marvin hadn't expected the leaf to be so hard to cut!

He had spent more or less forty minutes by now and the scene in the sky was still flickering faintly.

Everyone could see that Marvin had already cut about four-fifths of the way through and that it was getting harder with time, probably due to exhaustion.

Just a bit more and the Decaying Plateau would be cut off from the multiverse!

And Diggles' name would become history!

Marvin would truly become a hero.

But... The hero would most likely be unable to return after completing his mission.

This was something they didn't want to see.

They all looked at each other in dismay, their gazes ultimately settling on Ivan.

Ivan forced a smile and slowly stood up.

"I'll give it a try," he said with uncertainty.

"You Highness Ivan..." said Ollie worriedly, "I'm afraid that King Nicholas is unwilling to see you right now."

Ivan frowned, "Why?"

"He just gave me an order not to let anyone disturb him!"

Ollie had an awkward expression on her face.

"I'm not anyone, I'm his son!" Ivan coldly retorted to Ollie and then rushed toward the depths of Thousand Leaves Forest.

They were all silent.

They all knew the father-son relationship between Ivan and the Great Elven King was extremely bad, but from the way Ivan acted, they could clearly see how important Marvin was to him.

In any case, he had to try.

Following his heart's perception, Ivan quickly walked through the Thousand Leaves Forest.

He finally arrived at a secret area in the depths of the forest.

What surprised him was that no one was there to send him away.



He frowned and walked forward, only to see a lake in the center of the secret grounds.

The Great Elven King Nicholas was soaking in the lake, completely naked!

"Father..." Ivan didn't know what to say.

The Great Elven King slowly turned toward him.

His waist was underwater, and drops of water trickled down his pure white skin. But what shocked Ivan was that on his chest there was a constantly burning hole!

That hole was shockingly expanding!

"You..."

"What happened to you?!"

Ivan abruptly started to rush over.

"Stop," Nicholas firmly said.

Ivan stopped.

He dazedly looked at the Great Elven King. Ever since he was a child, Nicholas had always been invincible in his eyes. He was imposing and no one could injure him!

He was so awe-inspiring, always at the top, never tired, afraid, or confused.

But the Great Elven King's face was currently filled with exhaustion!

Gray hair could be seen appearing near his temples.

A frightening flame was still lingering on that hole in his chest, constantly destroying the Great Elven King's body.

"Close your eyes, turn around, and leave." Nicholas' voice was still cold but the fatigue could be felt from it.

"I might need to sleep for some time."

"And you are still an exiled elf, please leave."

"I once told you, don't come back before you have truly matured. I can still see childish ignorance on your body."

"Ivan... You have really let me down." His voice gradually sank in the lake as he slowly submerged his body, ultimately disappearing."

Ivan stood by the lake in a daze, looking at the shadow of the Great Elven King, and then looking up at Marvin's struggling expression. A lonely expression appeared on his face.

...

God Realm, a secret discussion.

"Thanks to those two fools, Ann Maria and Glynos, Nicholas was actually drawn out."

"Yeah, Nicholas had been hiding in the Thousand Leaves Forest for so many years, I didn't expect that he would actually be unable to hold back and leave Feinan, giving us a chance."

"Your [Flaming Divine Spear] directly pierced his heart. He won't be able to recover for a few decades."

"The threat has been reduced quite a bit."

...

On the World Tree, through Marvin's tireless efforts, he finally reached the final step!

He took a deep breath, his forehead covered in sweat.

And the Golden Scissors also started to become faint because they were about to finish their task. They might disappear anytime now!

Marvin clenched his teeth and was about to start the final snap, to completely destroy the Decaying Plateau.

But unexpectedly, as he focused on the leaf, he noticed something below.

There was a huge shadow coming from far away.

It came from the Void!

'Fuck...'

Marvin took a deep breath.

It was an Astral Beast!

It had been drifting at the border of the Void!

It slowly raised its head and coldly looked toward Marvin.

Marvin froze, and his hands stopped moving!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## **Read Night Ranger - Chapter 241: The Fall of a Hero?**

Chapter 241: The Fall of a Hero?

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

People referred to the emptiness between planes as the Astral Plane.

The Astral Plane wasn't completely empty, with many tenacious species living there, such as God Spawns, and all kinds of Beholders.

And the Astral Beast was one of the most frightening creatures of the Astral Plane.

The body of an adult Astral Beast could be so huge that it could be comparable in size with a small plane.

And they were stronger than Dragons at birth. In the multiverse, Astral Beasts were clearly at the top of the food chain.

They would slowly eat bits of the discarded planes.

But those were the ordinary Astral Beasts.

This Astral Beast was even bigger than the ordinary Astral Beasts.

It had left the boundary of the Void, meaning that it was able to resist the gravitational pull of the Void.

This was very unusual for an Astral Beast.

Marvin took a deep breath and relaxed.

'That Astral Beast is most likely the one that would try to eat Feinan after the collapse of the Universe Magic Pool!'

'At that time, the collapse of the Universe Magic Pool sent signals in all directions. This Astral Beast thought it was the sign of a plane being discarded and intended to rush over to take advantage of it.'

'Fortunately, those gods had a treasure able to kill an Astral Beast. The funny thing was that this treasure was actually left behind by Lance the Wizard God.'

"These gods must have known and still boldly used it."

A lot of information related to the Astral Beast and the Void flashed through Marvin's mind.

...

Most of the content of the game happened in the vast Feinan with its endless content, giving players an interesting game world, but from the words of various natives, and the lore of many quests, it could be seen that this world wasn't simply limited to Feinan.

Feinan was only the center stage. A lot of people wanted to reach this stage because of its extreme charm.

They were going all out for this.

Demons Evil Spirits, Devils... and even gods!

The gap between planes was called the Astral Plane.

And below all the worlds, at the roots of the World Tree, there was an even more silent place.

That was the Void.

The depths of the Void had some kind of natural gravitational force. Things that couldn't resist its attraction would fall.

Things like old discarded planes. They might have been born from the World Tree, but after experiencing countless periods of rise and fall, these planes gradually died and were slowly discarded.

They would automatically fall off of the World Tree and plummet into the abyss of the Void.

The Decaying Plateau was clearly not a dead plane. Its connection to the World Tree was artificially severed.

But its ending was the same because very rarely would something be able to resist the Void's gravitational force. Thus, the Decaying Plateau was unable to escape its fate!

It wasn't only limited to the Decaying Plateau. It was the same for many God Realms.

Above Feinan was the Astral Sea. It was a relatively distorted world where gods could establish their own God Realm and start spreading their own religions and nurture followers throughout various planes.

They would use their own power to resist the Void's gravitational pull, and at the same time, with the help of these God Realms, the gravitational pressure would be a lot weaker.

But gods would inevitably die.

At this time, without the support of Divine Power, the God Realm would fall.

The Realms of these dead gods would also fall from the Astral Sea.

Even if some slumbering gods left enough Divine Power to resist this gravitational force before going into slumber, their God Realm could also fall because they didn't plan their awakening well.

If they didn't awaken in time, then their God Realm might fall into the Abyss, Hell, or even the Void.

The God of Wealth for example, was sabotaged during his slumber. He was unable to awaken on time and could only sleep as his God Realm fell.

His God Realm was buried along with him.

...

This Astral Beast's body was half as big as Feinan. The reason Marvin could have such a clear look was because the space-time around the World Tree was distorted.

His body hadn't changed.

But in his view, Feinan was a tree leaf while the monster below it seemed smaller.

It had countless pairs of eyes and was looking around, like a predator looking for its prey.

Its gaze made people shiver because it actually stood for destruction.

But Marvin knew that the Astral Beast wasn't actually looking at him; it was simply curiously looking up.

He didn't know how far the distance between them was, but if it wanted to enter Feinan, it would have to use up a lot of energy. Furthermore, there were many planes in the multiverse that were under the protection of the World Tree, so it wouldn't be easy to find. Without huge movements to lead it there, the huge beast wouldn't find them.

The beast was very powerful, but it was like a blind person in a vast and dark multiverse. If not for the explosion of the Universe Magic Pool, it simply couldn't have found this place.

Thinking of this, Marvin made a decision.

He began resolutely using all his remaining strength to finish cutting the Decaying Plateau!

Suddenly, Diggles' voice echoed besides his ear!

"Despicable Marvin! I curse you! I want you to carry the curse with the power of an entire world!"

Marvin was startled.

That rotten leaf quietly floated down from the World Tree.

...

In Feinan, people were still looking at the scene in the sky, startled.

The originally azure sky turned somewhat green. They saw a huge amount of monsters howling in grief, they saw their struggle as their world crumbled, they saw Diggles cursing hysterically... and they saw Marvin's grave face.

At that moment, everyone in Feinan understood Marvin's actions.

He destroyed one of the Evil Spirits' worlds.

He brought peace back to Feinan, which had been suffering from the invasions of the Decaying Plateau.

He was a hero.

This feeling rose up in all of the common people of Feinan.

And all of East Coast was in an uproar.

Even if the people in the north had no clue who this youth was, East Coast's inhabitants already knew about that Magical Marvin whose name had been resounding for a while.

"Long live Lord Marvin!"

People were cheering in the streets of Tornado Harbor.

"Great Hero Marvin!"

Noble ladies' gazes were heating up as they foolishly looked at Marvin in the sky.

A feeling of happiness spread through the majority of the people.

The depressing feeling that had plagued them ever since Anthony's death had lightened quite a bit.

Because, with the Decaying Plateau's fall, Feinan's atmosphere seemed to be a lot cleaner.

All of this, in everyone's eyes, was thanks to Marvin!

On the World Tree, Marvin's logs kept popping.

His Fame had already raised extremely high!

And it wasn't just Region Fame, it was World Fame, and there was even Multiverse Fame!

This meant that not only Feinan's inhabitants knew of Marvin, but even the gods started to pay attention to this guy who destroyed a plane!

Marvin was also a bit excited.

This Fame had advantages and disadvantages, but after he successfully returned to Feinan, and if he carefully used it, it would definitely be advantageous overall.

'Hero Marvin. This is quite pleasant to hear.'

'With the power to gather people like that, along with enough strength, it might be possible to gather most of the forces of Feinan after the Great Calamity.'

'I want these gods' schemes to be fruitless!'

As he thought of this, the Decaying Plateau fell near the Evil Spirit Sea.

Diggles tried to use his power to support the Decaying Plateau and let it merge with the Evil Spirit Sea once again, but this was already impossible.

Its descent was too quick because of the Void's attraction, and the Evil Spirit Sea couldn't support it. Thus, the Decaying Plateau fell deeper in the darkness.

There wasn't enough time.

Diggles' body and soul had already merged with the entire plane. It would be impossible to flee alone even if he wanted to.

Thus he could only hurl his most severe curse at Marvin.

He used the entire plane's power, but the curse still didn't affect Marvin.

The Golden Scissors protected the Plane Destroyer, not letting any curse harm him!

Despite the Scissors disappearing, before they were completely gone, they were still an extremely powerful artifact!

'Finally took care of it!' Marvin let out a long breath.

He watched the Decaying Plateau falling down and being swallowed by that Astral Beast that was waiting on the edge of the Void. This guy was clearly waiting there for food!

From that day onwards, Diggles and the Decaying Plateau would be no more.

The other planes of the Underworld were like the Abyss or Hell, far from Feinan.

Marvin also got his hands on the Plane Destroyer title.

But he didn't have time to carefully check this title, because a huge power suddenly emerged behind him!

Marvin's body couldn't resist being pushed away!

He looked back in surprise, but all he saw was a woman's face.

"You think you are the only one with a token from the Ancient Nature God?"

She softly laughed. "Farewell, Marvin."

Then, Marvin's body started falling!

...



Feinan.

Everyone was shocked by what suddenly happened!

Their hero Marvin was actually sneak attacked and fell from the World Tree!

In an instant, they lost track of Marvin.

But everyone who saw what happened knew... Marvin would have the same end as the Decaying Plateau and Diggles.

He would fall in the Void!

Waiting for him was endless cold and death!

"Noooooo!"

Thousand Leaves Forest.

Hathaway and Ivan simultaneously let out an unwilling roar!

Shadow Thief Owl looked at Marvin disappearing from the sky, in a daze. And that beautiful woman was still standing on the World Tree.

An image gradually condensed behind her back.

Eight heads, with the ninth still growing.

This was the mark of the Azure Matriarch!

Feinan got rid of the Evil Spirits only to sink in the shadow of the Twin Snakes Cult!

"They are asking for death!" Murderous intent flashed through Ivan's eyes.

He then recklessly rushed out of Thousand Leaves Forest.

Shadow Thief Owl silently disappeared. Endless Ocean solemnly began to contact Constantine.

And White River Valley fell into complete chaos!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 242: Legends' Wrath!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Marvin died!

The Overlord died?

These kind of thoughts lingered in the hearts of the territory's inhabitants.

They didn't know why they would think that way, but after the scene in the sky disappeared, they had this kind of intense feeling in their heart.

Because Marvin's situation was extremely dangerous.

Moreover, he was falling in the boundless darkness.

It looked very frightening.

The unlearned people gathered at the castle, hoping Miss Anna or Lord Wayne could give them an answer.

But they didn't wait for long.

...

"How could this be!"

"How could someone else enter the World Tree domain?"

When Marvin's silhouette fell into the darkness, Daniela's face was filled with disbelief.

Especially when she saw the person who pushed Marvin!

"It's that woman!"

She hatefully gritted her teeth.

Bamboo.

When they fought last time, she faintly felt that Bamboo's strength was somewhat suppressed, but she would have never expected that she would be able to see through Marvin's operation!

That was the World Tree! Falling from there would lead to a tragic end!

No one could resist the Void's gravitational strength!

Daniela was blankly looking at that scene.

Did that guy really die?

"Impossible!" Wayne firmly shook his head. "Brother will be fine! I can sense it!"

Anna's countenance was filled with sorrow. She looked at Wayne's firm expression and didn't know what to say.

Marvin was White River Valley's pillar. If he died... she didn't know what would happen to White River Valley.

She had no idea of what was happening to Marvin, so she quickly walked to Daniela and forcefully kept her emotions in check. "Miss Daniela, Lord Marvin, he..."

Her eyes were still carrying a hint of hope.

Daniela dazedly looked at Anna, strangely feeling a bit mournful.

If that man really died... then what would she do?

Ancestor's Mystery would follow him to the Void. The Archdevil's head would be unsealed sooner or later.

All her work in White River Valley also felt like it would be meaningless.

"Lady Daniela!?" Anna raised her tone.

Daniela bitterly shook her head. "Falling from that place... Returning alive shouldn't be possible."

Anna only felt her limbs turn cold as she fainted.

The people around couldn't help but cry out in alarm!

A newly recruited maid hurried over and helped Anna up, to return to her room.

Only Wayne and Daniela remained on the city walls.

"Impossible, Brother won't die." Tears flickered in Wayne's eyes, but his words were resolute. "I can feel it!"

Daniela took a deep breath.

She remembered that before Marvin was pushed down, Wayne said he had a bad feeling.

Afterwards, something really happened.

In such a safe and restricted area, something that should have been impossible happened: an enemy infiltrated the place.

Then, Wayne's perception...

She hurriedly asked, "You really can sense that your older brother is alive?"

"Of course!" Wayne quickly nodded.

But his two fists were tightly clenched and his fingernails were unconsciously digging into his skin, drawing blood.

His eyes were full of despair.

Daniela realized.

He actually didn't have that kind of power.

The reason he insisted that his older brother was alive was just delusion.

Thinking of this, the future Ice Empress suddenly had an urge.

She gently held Wayne and softly promised, "Rest assured, your older brother will definitely return."

"Before he comes back, no one will be able to bully White River Valley."

"I'll protect this territory on his behalf."

"Who made me his fiancée..."

...

The entire world saw Marvin falling from the World Tree.

A lot of people felt regret.

A hero finally appeared, but he was strangled by more evil forces.

Many people knew the Azure Nine-Headed mark!

This was the Twin Snakes Cult displaying their strength to the entirety of Feinan!

She was sowing the seeds of fear.

But not everyone was afraid.

Some people were angry.

Bamboo, who had entered the World Tree's space with the help of the World Ending Twin Snakes, would have never imagined that Marvin's death wasn't the perfect display of strength of the Twin Snakes Cult.

In fact, it was the beginning of a disaster for the Twin Snakes Cult!

...

East Coast.

A bare sand dune.

"This should be the seventeenth, that is, East Coast's final Twin Snakes Cult's stronghold. Lady, Do you want to...?"

On a magic carpet, a wretched Thief was pointing at the sand dune below and talking.

"No need!" Hathaway coldly said.

What the Thief asked was whether he should check it out or not.

But Hathaway currently didn't have that patience. The scene of Marvin falling into the abyss of darkness kept replaying in her mind!

That woman killed Marvin!

The scene of Marvin dying that was played in front of the entire world, was like a knife stabbing in her heart!

To be honest, the feelings between her and Marvin were somewhat subtle.

The first contact between them was related to that page of the Book of Nalu. Then it was followed by the Shadow Prince's assassination attempt. The feeling she got was unusually intriguing. She knew that if it wasn't for Marvin giving her that page of the Book of Nalu, she would have taken some time before advancing to Legend.

She always subconsciously treated Marvin as the benefactor who saved her life.

And this benefactor was quite interesting. He wasn't stuck with ordinary ways of thinking, usually doing things that would shock others.

Such as this plan to attack the Evil Spirit World!

He was a 3rd rank Ranger and shockingly had that kind of boldness and courage. This was something Hathaway loved about him.

She didn't know what kind of feelings she had toward Marvin, or how deep they were.

But she didn't want to think about it now.

The current her only wanted to vent her anger!

Ashes Storm!

The terrifying arcane spell leveled the land. Wherever the storm of ashes went, it only left a barren landscape behind.

In an instant, the sand dune collapsed and countless shadows could be seen rushing up, but those people couldn't escape the roiling ashes.

The storm of ashes was like a meat grinder, crazily sucking the Twin Snakes Cult's followers inside and turning into a rain of blood and flesh!

This even included one of the purple-gowned evil priests!

After a short three minutes, no life could be found near the sand dune.

The Thief shivered, this Hathaway already eradicated seventeen Twin Snakes Cult strongholds in a week.

Regardless of the size, and regardless of who was inside, she only one had intention...

Kill!

This was a Legend's wrath!

"Next," Hathaway coldly said.

"There isn't any," the Thief cautiously said, "You already wiped out all of East Coast's Twin Snakes Cult's strongholds!"

"There are none left in East Coast?"

Hathaway was apparently quite vexed, but soon, she lifted her head and resolutely ordered, "Then let's head west."

A sour expression appeared on the Thief's face!

...

A city in the North.

"Constantine, even if the officials of this city are pawns of the Twin Snakes Cult and the place is one of their headquarters, isn't doing something like that a bit over the top?"

"As far as I know, there are still many innocents in this city."

The night wind blew as a handsome middle-aged man wearing a windbreaker silently assembled his Brilliant Purple with a grave expression on his face.

Marvin had handed this Legendary Weapon to Endless Ocean before going into the World Tree's domain, but as a Legendary Weapon, it could automatically go back to its owner. When Marvin fell, he immediately recalled it to use it.

A slim man was standing next to him, apparently trying to dissuade him.

But Constantine ignored him.

"Do you know what it feels to lose everything you invested?"

"Do you know that I looked for you to dissect a Red Dragon, and now there is no Red Dragon?"

"Do you know..."

"... What it feels like to lose a friend?"

The slim man sighed, "That isn't as bad as massacring everyone in a city."

Constantine slightly laughed. "Some people need to learn."

Then he pulled on Brilliant Purple's lever.

Frightening power burst out of the Cannon as a pure white radiance, like the first rays of dawn, illuminated the city.

"Woosh!" The bullet split into countless fragments and dropped from the sky.

Constantine carried Brilliant Purple on his shoulder and said to the other person while lighting a cigar, "Let's go, next city."

"Bang!"

A thunderous sound echoed.

A furious wind lifted his windbreaker, and soon, it merged into the darkness.

...

Similar scenes appeared in every corner of Feinan, constantly repeating.

Apart from the seriously hurt Inheim, as well as Sky Fury who brought him to get healed, every member of that Legend team made a move.

They acted spontaneously.

They didn't plan anything.

But regardless of how, the Twin Snakes Cult's forces began to suffer from a crazy retaliation.

In just a week, all their forces around East Coast had been extinguished, and a few of their cities in the North had been completely reduced to ruins. Other forces also received a destructive blow!

No one thought that the death of a mere Baron would bring such a disturbance to the Twin Snakes Cult.

All of Feinan talked about those Legends making such a high profile appearance and crazily retaliating!

The Twin Snakes Cult was finished!

This was what everyone was thinking.

...

Far in the North.

The Legend Barbarian and the drunk old man kept watching the changes in the glacier.

But at this time, a black-clothed man walked over from the south, step by step.

"What do you want to do!" The old man looked at him and loudly asked.

"Kill her."

The black-clothed man's answer was blunt.

He was still holding a huge head in his arms. The Legend Barbarian saw that head and was frightened!

That was the Molten Overlord's head!



"She killed my brother."

"Night Walkers will always take revenge."

"Please get out of the way."

Then, the black-clothed man suddenly rushed past them and pulverized the glacier in one blow!

...

In the quiet World Tree's domain.

After Bamboo left this space, perfectly satisfied.

A sneaky shadow slowly appeared from another branch.

'Fortunately...'

'This Lord still had a hidden card.'

'Otherwise it would have really been over.'

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 243: Celestial Stairway

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Earlier, when Marvin saw that horrifying Astral Beast, he felt a chill.

He knew that the Astral Beast was very far from him and that it couldn't threaten him...

But that kind of bad feeling made him very uneasy.

Thus, he followed his instincts and secretly used a hidden move.

Shadow Doppelganger!

Marvin's main body had held the gold scissors for forty minutes, but then Marvin surreptitiously acted.

He jumped back to another tree branch and used Hide, leaving his doppelganger behind, still in his original position.

Rangers had immense affinity with the World Tree. In this place, his hiding skills would have unlimited bonuses.

He controlled the Shadow Doppelganger to continue his work. Though it didn't have its own Divine Fragment, Marvin did, and he had already activated the scissors. As the remaining work was only physical labor, it could be done even without a Divine Fragment if it finished fast enough.

At the same time, the Shadow Doppelganger had most of Marvin's abilities, so Marvin had it use Disguise to look perfectly like him.

Disguise was a powerful skill, enough to make a powerhouse like Bamboo unable to sense anything wrong.

After she "killed" Marvin, she still checked her surroundings.

Unfortunately, even though the World Ending Twin Snakes' Divine Power forcefully raised her to the Legend Realm, her Perception was still unable to find Marvin hiding under the blessings of the World Tree.

This allowed Marvin to escape disaster.

He took a long breath as cold sweat trickled down his forehead.

This world really was crisis after crisis. If he wasn't cautious enough, he would have already died!

Falling from here would really leave him no hope for survival. A place like the Void would even make gods afraid.

...

'The World Ending Twin Snakes are worthy of being Evil Gods from ancient times. Despite their main bodies being sealed by Lance, they clearly still had a way to enter the World Tree Domain!'

'This is something even the gods can't do.'

'There aren't many tokens of the Ancient Nature God left apart from the Golden Scissors. They unexpectedly got their hands on one...'

'There really is nowhere safe in this world...'

Marvin looked at the shadow of Bamboo disappearing from the World Tree, ruthlessness appearing in his heart.

There would inevitably be a day when he would pull those snakes out of the Ethereal Plane and chop them into countless pieces.

Making snake soup also sounds good.

As for that Bamboo, he would definitely not let go scot-free. After leaving, he would find ways to make her suffer.

He also had a lot of ideas to take revenge on the Twin Snakes Cult. Unfortunately, inside the World Tree domain, Marvin didn't know that the Twin Snakes Cult was already being met with a lot of troubles.

...

Right now, the most important problem was for Marvin to find a way out of the World Tree domain.

In his original plan, Marvin would cut the rotten leaf and then return to the Decaying Plateau before leaving with the Legends.

But that obviously wouldn't work now.

Marvin didn't know what happened outside, but he was certain that the Shadow Prince and the Plague God had interfered.

Whether the Legends could survive would depend greatly on whether the Great Elven King was willing to make a move.

But based on the Great Elven King's character, he would definitely not sit idle and watch Ivan lose his life. With Owl notifying him, their escape should be taken care of.

The Legends should definitely be able to go back, but Marvin... was in a bit of trouble.

He was trapped in the World Tree's domain!

If no one came to get him, he wouldn't be able to return via typically known methods.

But Marvin didn't need to rely on others for this, because he had his own backup plan.

The [Celestial Stairway].

...

The World Tree wasn't the only existence linking the multiverse's planes.

Apart from the World Tree, there was the [Celestial Stairway] and the [River Styx].

Marvin wouldn't think of using the River Styx. That thing went from the Astral Sea and split into two, one part going to the Abyss while the other part went to Hell, before ultimately converging in a bottomless abyss.

That was also a place where Demons and Devils fought countless bloody battles.

Without the [Boat of the Other Shore], don't think of crossing the River Styx.

The Celestial Stairway was different. As long as he had the correct number, he could go back to Feinan.

'If I'm not mistaken, Feinan plane's code is 0420. As long as I don't open the wrong door, it shouldn't be a problem.'

Marvin thought of this and started caressing the World Tree's surface.

The Celestial Stairway was inside the World Tree.

He just needed to find an entrance.

This was a very long process. Thankfully he had enough water and rations, and the World Tree naturally produced oxygen. He could survive in this place.

A whole week passed quickly.

He finally stood on a strange twig and found the entrance to the Celestial Stairway.

...

While looking for the entrance to the Celestial Stairway, Marvin was also quite bored, and checked his own stats window.

After such a crazy plan, it could be said that his stats window had undergone big changes.

Right at the beginning of the undertaking, he obtained more than eighty thousand battle exp just from shooting the Moss Prison. Along with what he had before, the total already exceeded one hundred ten thousand!

Such a huge amount of experience could let him reach level 15, a powerhouse on the verge of advancing to 4th rank.

But he was baffled by the fact that he couldn't distribute his experience in the World Tree Domain.

It was probably related to this mysterious place.

But in any case, the experience was his. Once he left, he would be able to distribute it.

If he was lucky, he might advance to 4th rank directly!

In a bit more than two months, he advanced from a defenseless noble to a powerhouse about to reach 4th rank! This was something ordinary people wouldn't dare imagine.

The training speed of the natives was a lot slower than Marvin's.

This was a huge advantage.

And apart from a large amount of experience, Marvin gained the fierce [Plane Destroyer]'s title.

This title was similar to [Dragon Slayer] and would automatically be equipped. It was different from low-level titles, as most high-level titles were stackable.

For example, he could have both [Dragon Slayer] and [Plane Destroyer] at the same time.

This was different from [Chaotic Battle Expert] or [Rope Master], which he had to manually equip.

...

[Plane Destroyer]

[Description: You destroyed one of the Underworld's planes, something many powerhouses have been unable to accomplish. Your actions will make the entire multiverse pay attention to you, because you might be someone drunk on bringing forth destruction. But there is good news. Most inhabitants of your plane (Feinan) believe you are the Savior.]

[Property (1): Planar Core Affinity +1]

[Property (2): World Fame +15]

[Property (3): Underworld Enmity +20]

[Property (4): Dignity (Noble) +30]

...

One title, four properties. And besides the Underworld Enmity, all of them were quite useful.

Hostility from the Underworld was something to be expected, since something like the fall of the Decaying Plateau would clearly be visible from the Evil Spirit Sea.

Many Evil Spirits should have seen Diggles fall past them.

When Marvin shot the Red Dragon, the reason he only gained a bit of Chromatic Dragon Enmity was because no other Dragon actually saw him.

But this time he destroyed the Decaying Plateau in front of the whole Multiverse.

It was obvious that the Underworld Enmity would raise like that.

As for Planar Core Affinity, this was very important.

Marvin opened his right hand, revealing an emerald crystal. This was the Planar Core of the Decaying Plateau.

Marvin had taken so long because he wanted to extract the Decaying Plateau's Planar Core completely intact.

This thing looked so small, yet inside it were the Plane's energy and knowledge. This Planar Core Affinity would help Marvin have an easier time controlling it in the future. The prerequisite was that Marvin had enough power to activate it.

From Marvin's estimations, if he wanted to activate this Planar Core, he would need to at least be a Legend or higher.

Legend Wizards were definitely able to activate a Planar Core because they could already create their own Demi-Planes.

But Marvin wasn't quite sure about Legend Rangers.

But regardless, Marvin wouldn't ignore good things.

And of course, there was no need to mention World Fame. After all, Marvin destroyed the Decaying Plateau in front of all of Feinan's living beings.

Even if it was only an illusion in the sky, and although a lot of people thought it was a hallucination, many people still believed it to be real.

His World Fame kept raising.

'I became famous this time... I'll need to disguise myself when I go out in the future.'

Marvin faintly smiled. World Fame was especially beneficial.

As for Dignity, it was also useful. Because the Noble class didn't gain Skill Points when leveling up, these skills would only slowly increase.

This increase of 30 would make it a lot easier to manage his territory in the future.

The higher Dignity was, the less people would want to go against him. This was the most obvious effect. As for its other effects, Marvin was still only guessing.

...

The only thing that disappointed Marvin was that even if he destroyed the plane, the Evil Spirits inhabiting it didn't count as being killed by him.

They didn't turn into Marvin's battle exp, or else with that much exp, Marvin would have directly advanced to Legend.

But regardless, he had earned a lot this time.

Even if the risk was high, the profits were even higher. Furthermore, half of the treasures Owl stole from Diggles' treasury were Marvin's!

Thinking of this, he was even more impatient to return to Feinan.

He pushed open that door and entered the World Tree.

It was a gorgeously colored space.

A floating flight of steps was in front of him. At the end of the flight of steps was a door. And on that door was a number.

Marvin intended to step on the Celestial Stairway, but who would have thought that a painting would suddenly fly over?

The man on the painting was very familiar!

'Wizard God Lance!' Marvin was very surprised.

But he couldn't have imagined that what happened next would shock him even more.

Wizard God Lance on the painting suddenly smiled:

"Hello, Marvin."

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 244: 4th Rank!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Wizard God?

This surprised Marvin.

What shocked him was that the other side was actually talking to him.

In Feinan, paintings often had this mysterious ability. After Marvin transmigrated, he met many similar items, such as the Ghost Hallway's paintings, and his grandfather's.

In short, they were often enchanted.

As for why the Wizard God knew his name, Marvin wasn't too surprised. After all, Feinan's lore described Lance as something like a God of Creation.

"Hello? Sir Lance..."

Marvin didn't know if this was the Wizard God himself or some remnant consciousness.

He tried to communicate with him.

But unexpectedly, Lance's painting suddenly took quite a severe tone.

"You shouldn't have come to this world!"

"You are a stowaway!"

"You don't belong here, you should be exiled!"

Marvin held his breath.

The Wizard God on the painting suddenly became extremely sinister.

He instinctively felt something wrong.

"Could it be that you want to defy my words?" The Wizard God coldly declared, "You don't deserve to step foot on the Celestial Stairway."

"You should scam to the Void, and disappear along that Underworld Plane!"

Marvin froze.

Was this what the Wizard God thought of him?



He truly didn't belong to this world, but... How could he know?

The painting kept floating near Marvin as the Wizard God represented in it kept glaring at him harshly.

Suddenly, Marvin had a realization!

'Damn, I almost fell for that bluff!'

'I heard there could be some spirit monsters near the Celestial Stairway that could reflect and confound people's thoughts, but today is the first time I met one here!'

Ruthlessness filled Marvin's heart as he suddenly stepped on the Celestial Stairway, grabbing that painting.

The "Wizard God" in the painting suddenly panicked. "What do you think you are doing? Quickly let go! You are profaning God Lance's prestige..."

"Profaning God Lance's prestige?" Marvin sneered, "Aren't you the one doing that?"

After saying this, he unhesitantly and ferociously tore the painting apart!

"Woosh!" The painting shattered into pieces, and the "Wizard God" in the painting turned into a weird small thing.

It was a type of Imp. His main body was similar to a painting, and he could change its external appearance to bluff people.

If Marvin hadn't experienced that test in the Eternal Night Kingdom, and suddenly recalled the existence of those things, he might have truly believed it.

After all, that thing would reflect a part of this heart. The things he saw or heard would be a reflection of his inner heart.

'Haha... Is there really something to be scared of?' Marvin laughed at himself.

His transmigration was an unfathomable mystery. Even if he quickly blended in this world thanks to the system, and busied himself with the Great Calamity that was about to happen...

There was still doubt and fear in his heart.

It was hidden deep within, and Marvin tried to not think of it as much as possible... but that didn't mean they didn't exist.

Why did he transmigrate? Was this incidental, or was it something planned?

This world was so real. Then why would it appear on Earth as a game?

Marvin wanted to know the answers to all these questions, but nothing could be done to clear them up.

But regardless, Marvin would eventually find the answers!

But not now.

He had to return to Feinan.

Tossing that small thing away, Marvin finally walked up the Celestial Stairway!

...

The Celestial Stairway was a long and twisted Stairway inside the World Tree.

Each door represented a plane.

And among these planes, only Feinan was the Prime Material Plane. The others were all Secondary Material Planes.

There were countless Secondary Material Planes, which also had continents and oceans, countless living beings and races.

When Lance formed the Universe Magic Pool, he only surrounded Feinan. Those Secondary Material Planes didn't receive the protection and favor from the Universe Magic Pool.

The gods who rose up during the 3rd Era could only develop their own religions in the Secondary Planes.

And these Secondary Planes also had a flaw. The power of Faith that they offered were far from what the Prime Plane would give. This was the main reason why the gods were dissatisfied.

From another point of view, living beings from Secondary Planes had a limit to the power they could reach, and this problem didn't exist in Feinan.

In short, countless Planes existed under Feinan. Before Marvin transmigrated, the game company released a trailer of the next expansion, the [Planar Wars].

Feinan was the center stage of the multiverse, but the other planes would also have their own stages.

The Planar Wars originated from fights over beliefs, from people thirsting for freedom, from all kinds of ambitions and desires.

The Great Calamity was only the beginning of a chaotic era. Marvin had a premonition: in the future, after Feinan lost the Universe Magic Pool's protection, they would definitely be involved in the fires of war from the Planar Wars.

To this end, he could only start his preparations early.

...

'0420...'

'0420...'

Restraining himself from opening doors to other random planes to take a look, Marvin patiently began looking for Feinan's symbol.

He kept climbing the Celestial Stairway, passing by dozens of Secondary Planes before finally finding Feinan.

It was a golden door, and once he pushed it open, Marvin would be able to return to Feinan. But if he wanted to come back to the World Tree Domain, he would have to find another token of the Ancient Nature God.

He opened the door without any hesitation.

Then, a dazzling white light blinded him.

...

'Feinan. I'm back.'

He was surrounded by flourishing trees. Marvin's didn't seem to have made a mistake when returning.

This place was outside the White Deer Cave in the Deathly Silent Hills, where Marvin originally set up a plane mark.

He had made proper preparations before going out to that Underworld plane.

If he hadn't set up a plane mark, then who knew where the Celestial Stairway's Teleportation Portal would have sent him, perhaps to that Dead Area, or even in the sea.

But what surprised Marvin was that there was no one in the White Deer Cave.

In fact, he couldn't seem to contact anyone.

Hathaway's token was a single-use item, and Owl's Thousand Paper Crane had apparently suffered some damage. Thankfully, the storage function was okay, and the Red Dragon's corpse was still there. Marvin didn't know how to connect to the others.

At that time, he still didn't know that the scene of him dying after taking out the Decaying Plateau had been seen by Feinan's people, causing most people to mistakenly think he was already dead.

Thus he wasn't anxious, and leisurely strolled around the Deathly Silent Hills.

This place was the same as before, but he wasn't sure how much time had passed.

'Whatever, I'll head back to check on White River Valley. I need to figure out exactly what happened meanwhile.'

Marvin decided so and started his trip back.

...

He wasn't idle on his journey home.

Since he had returned to Feinan, the mysterious power around the World Tree disappeared. He could spend his experience to advance.

Marvin carefully looked at his battle experience that had reached 110770 points!

This included the exp gained from shooting the Moss Prison, the Brain Eating Monsters, and so on.

But this battle experience was enough for Marvin to reach 4th rank!

Moreover, there was also the 20000 general exp, of which 10000 came from the Path of Darkness, and the other 10000 came from the Assassin Alliance quest which was shown as completed. It was clear that after he used the Night Crow to notify the Bai High Priest of the Brain Eating Monsters killing the White Deer, this quest had been completed.

Thus, his total experience reached more than 130000 points!

This was enough to let him reach 4th rank!

Marvin carefully thought for a bit and quickly spent his experience.

First was naturally his Night Walker class level up. After using 35000 exp, Marvin's Night Walker successfully reached level 5!

That way, he not only got 36 skill points, 100 HP, he also received a new Night Walker specialty!

[Night Boundary]: During the night, you can freely walk inside an fixed area, and your footsteps can distort space. Nightly use: 3.

That was the ability Sean used to frighten Marvin in Thousand Leaves Forest!

A level 5 Night Walker had the ability to distort space during the night. Even if it wasn't lethal, it could be compared to Ace Assassin's Shadow Shift!

In a way, Shadow Shift was a skill that needed to be activated. Night Boundary was a specialty, a natural passive ability. As long as it was during the Night, Marvin could twist a small space and step across.

This was an extremely good assassination ability!

...

Then came the Ranger level up.

Marvin carefully pondered. Even if his goal was Ruler of the Night, his Ranger base class had to have a sturdy foundation.

Moreover, he vaguely remembered that there was a rumor in the game that he could get three extra specialties if he could raise his basic class to full level. This rumor wasn't verified, but the degree of reliability was still quite high.

Thus he used about fifty to sixty thousand exp to level up his Ranger class twice!

His Ranger class immediately reached level 9 from level 7!

His Hp rose up by 156 points and he obtained 48 skill points. At the same time he obtained one attribute point!

Moreover, he obtained a basic specialty and an extra specialty!

It was [Ruler of the Wilderness] and [Tree Companion].

The former would substantially increase the effects of his skills in the wilderness while the latter would give him a beginner ability to communicate with trees.

The two were very practical specialties.

But most importantly, Marvin advanced to the 4th rank after leveling his Ranger class!

His total level reached 16!

(Ranger lvl 9 + Night Walker lvl 5 + [Halved] Shapeshift Sorcerer lvl 4/2 =16)

At the same time, his body was further strengthened with Fatal Injuries Immunity!

This was the privilege of 4th rank powerhouses!

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 245: Profiting From Someone's Misfortune?

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Fatal Injuries Immunity!

This was a property of some 4th rank powerhouses.

Once they reached this level, their vitality would become extremely powerful. Even if they were hit in a vital, they wouldn't die immediately.

The Ogres Marvin met before were like that.

Of course, not all classes had the Fatal Injuries Immunity ability.

It would be very difficult for the rogue classes such as Thief and Assassin classes to get this ability after reaching 4th rank. It was the same for Wizard and Sorcerer classes.

Among the rogue classes, Rangers were considered the most frontline class, with decent constitution, so they also gained this ability.

...

After advancing to 4th rank, Marvin needed to distribute his 2 attribute points and his large amount of skill points.

But he hesitated, choosing to set aside his attribute points for the moment.

Free attribute points were very precious. Generally speaking, he wouldn't consider putting his attribute points in another attribute until he obtained the 30 Dexterity's [Godly Dexterity].

But his Dexterity was currently restricted by his Constitution. If he couldn't increase his Constitution by other means, he would be forced to spend his attribute points on it instead.

Marvin knew some fairly quick ways to increase his Constitution, though nothing that would give results as quickly as he'd like.

Once this matter was resolved, he wanted to take another trip to Rocky Mountain, hopefully less... eventful.

And on the way, there was a special hot spring that could raise one's Constitution.

But there was a frightening monster guarding the hot springs. It wouldn't be easy if he wanted to soak in it.

As for the skill points, Marvin quickly took care of it.

48 Ranger skill points. He didn't choose to spend them on Hide. With his large increase in strength, this Ranger skill already had more than enough points in it.

Putting more points in Hide would be mostly unnecessary. Moreover, Hide and Stealth already had huge bonus effects from Ruler of the Wilderness and Nocturnal, so further skill points would have diminished returns.

Thus, he chose a passive skill, [Sleight of Hand].

He put all 48 points in it.

This skill could substantially increase the nimbleness of Marvin's hands. This skill was essential for Thieves. Even though Marvin was a Ranger, he would soon advance to Ruler of the Night and would be able to switch between curved daggers and straight daggers, which would make this skill very useful!

It would make Marvin's attacks even smoother!

...

After Night Walker reached level 5, he had received 36 skill points. With the previous 16 SP he kept last time, he reached a total of 52 SP.

Marvin again decided to spend most of it on one skill.

This time he chose to put 50 points in a level 5 Night Walker skill, [Shadow Escape]!

[Shadow Escape]: Shaded areas can be used to quickly flee.

This was certainly an escape skill, and what Marvin lacked the most before was exactly such an escape skill.

Shadow Escape, Night Jump and Night Boundary made Marvin's offensive and evasive abilities exceed what ordinary people could even imagine.

The most amazing part was that unlike Night Jump and Night Boundary, Shadow Escape wasn't restricted to a particular time of day.

Though it could only be used twice a day, it could also be used during daytime!

This increased Marvin's survivability when in danger.

At the same time, those 50 points unlocked a pretty good hidden effect, [Quick Disappearance].

[Quick Disappearance]: Your speed when using Shadow Escape increases by 50%.

One shouldn't look down on this 50%. Often, a mere instant could influence the outcome of a fight.

And the remaining two points were spent on [Summon Night Crow], since in any case, the skill was still quite practical.

...

On his way back, Marvin impatiently crossed River Shore City and quietly appeared in White River Valley.

When he arrived at White River Valley, it was already the afternoon.

But what shocked him was that there was an army bordering White River Valley!

Marvin frowned. He moved forward and used Disguise, pretending to be someone else.

He quietly rushed over and carefully took a look.

This was actually River Shore City's army!

'Madeline!'

Marvin took a deep breath!

He silently checked the command contract. As expected, days had passed, and the contract had already disappeared!



From this he could deduce that she had already become a Legend!

This woman was really ambitious. She advanced to Legend and was itching to settle the score!

Marvin sneered and quietly left.

...

White River Valley, in the conference room.

A messenger from River Shore City was speaking with assurance, "Viscount Marvin already met with misfortune. This is the outcome that everyone saw."

"Even if I don't understand those things, the Alliance already made a decision."

"After Viscount Marvin fell, his position was naturally inherited by his younger brother, Young Master Wayne. But with Wayne being still a child, it is clearly not suitable for him to manage White River Valley."

"Thus, our Lord, on account of her Friendship with the deceased Viscount Marvin, decided to bring White River Valley under her protection according to the rules of the Alliance."

"This is a signed letter."

"As long as Young Master Wayne signs and swears an oath of loyalty to Madeline, becoming her vassal, she would naturally protect White River Valley."

The messenger arrogantly handed a scroll over.

Wayne didn't even glance at it and rejected.

After that, he calmly said to the messenger, "I already said many times, my brother is still alive."

The messenger faintly smiled. "Perhaps. Unfortunately, the Alliance doesn't believe so."

He took out a certificate of death issued by the South Wizard Alliance. On top of it was listed Marvin's contributions: Opening new territories for the Alliance, and sacrificing himself for Feinan... After the verbose lines, Marvin's death was finally printed.

His properties were to be inherited by his younger brother Wayne. This was the traditional way the Alliance would handle it.

But at that time, Madeline made a move. She cited a large amount of previous rules, and even if on the surface, it said that she was protecting White River Valley, she was in fact simply annexing this territory.

Wayne wasn't a fool, and clearly understood what he should do.

That was to firmly deny Marvin's death. Even if the hope was very slim, even Lady Hathaway went berserk and slaughtered all the Twin Snakes Cult's strongholds throughout the East Coast. It was rumored that she was heading toward the North now.

White River Valley's people sank into panic.

Even though Miss Anna released a claim saying that Lord Marvin hadn't died but only temporarily lost contact, the next morning, all the inhabitants saw a notice informing them of Marvin's death signed by the Alliance.

This made White River Valley become somewhat unstable.

This was definitely a crafty plan from Madeline.

A territory could not be without an Overlord.

An expanding territory couldn't exist without an Overlord to stabilize his people's hearts.

It was clear that even if Wayne was capable, he was way too young.

Ever since that happened, all the situations had been suppressed by Daniela.

Even though that girl originally came here for the Archdevil's head, now that White River Valley had fallen into a real crisis, she didn't withdraw and stood up to fight!

All kinds of upheavals sprung up in the territory, and Daniela took care of it herself, strongly suppressing them!

And today wasn't any different.

In the conference room, in front of the messenger, the future Ice Empress moved forward and tore that scroll apart.

"I'll give you three minutes to get out of here."

"White River Valley doesn't need protection," Daniela rudely said.

The messenger gloomily replied, "The world isn't safe recently, and bandits also appeared on the main road..."

But he didn't get to finish his sentence before he turned into an ice sculpture!

An ice-cold aura spread through the entire conference room.

A surprised expression flashed through Anna and Wayne's eyes.

Even if they wanted to start a war with River Shore City, it was a principle for the armies to not harm the messengers. Even if this messenger was indeed quite detestable and made people want to drive him away.

But Daniella's action was like slapping River Shore City in the face.

But they didn't say anything against it because these days, they had been holding themselves back quite a bit!

In any case, Daniela was an outsider who dared to throw caution to the wind and set herself against Madeline. Anna and Wayne naturally had no reason not to support her!

"Hey, blockhead, do you dare to send that ice sculpture to that cheap woman?" Daniela coldly asked the Dark Knight standing at the side.

The latter was silent for a moment, before grabbing the sculpture and slowly walking out.

Daniela left the conference room, and, after a short moment, she returned, solemnly telling Anna and Wayne, "Rest assured, I won't let her have her way."

"I bet the reputation of my Lavis Kingdom on this."

Her expression was resolute.

...

'Turns out I'm already dead in the Alliance's eyes?'

After using Disguise, Marvin walked through White River Valley.

The adventurers apparently already felt that something was wrong and they all hid in the camp on the other side of the river.

There were notices from the Alliance announcing Marvin's death all over the territory. And Marvin already found out Madeline's purpose from those people's mouths!

She actually wanted to take advantage of his "death" to annex White River Valley!

'Hahaha, this woman is truly courting death.'

'Did she really think that she has nothing to fear after becoming a Legend?'

Marvin coldly looked at the picture of himself and made his decision.

At that time, he sensed a Dark Knight approaching!

Marvin didn't show himself and kept hiding!

This critical juncture was the best time to see what other people really thought.

Marvin straightforwardly hid, to see who was really loyal to White River Valley, and who was an opportunist.

...

Boundary between White River Valley and River Shore City.

River Shore City's army was solemnly standing at attention. On the side, the flag of the Silver Church could clearly be seen hanging down. There stood the Paladins of the Silver Church.

"Sir, do we really want to do this?" Gordian resentfully asked.

Collins leisurely answered, "The current structure of the South is already different. You should have noticed that Madeline is already a Legend. As for Marvin... That kid died too early."

"Now he cannot pay, so we can only help Lady Madeline."

"If his younger brother tactfully nodded, there wouldn't be any need for a war, everything would go along nicely."

"But... It looks like something bad is going to happen."

Following Collins' words, a Dark Knight carrying the iced envoy slowly walked on the main road.

"Crash!"

He suddenly threw the ice sculpture over. The target was that luxurious carriage inside the army!

Daniela walked behind him, alone, her face full of resolve.

"Bang!"

An exaggerated Fireball took shape and directly shattered the ice sculpture!

Ice and fire mixed together as blood and flesh sprinkled down on the army.

River Shore City's soldiers were uneasy.

"Tsk... Killing my subordinate, do you want to start a war?"

Madeline's seductive voice came over from the luxurious carriage.

Daniela slowly moved forward, a cold trail of ice appearing under her feet:

"Madeline, don't think of taking one step in this territory."

"Miss Daniela, I already know about you." Madeline calmly sat in the carriage, lazily chatting with Daniela.

She really had the qualifications to act like that, because she already advanced to a Legend Wizard. And Daniela was only a Half-Legend!

"You are Lavis Kingdom's princess. Even if you were engaged with Marvin, he is now dead. You don't have to fight me," Madeline said.

If it was someone else, Madeline might have already made a move.

But she was somewhat afraid of the retaliation of Daniela's clan.

But still, she couldn't understand Daniela's stubbornness!

She coldly said, "I'll repeat it once. You and your army, don't think of taking one step in this territory."

"I might not be fond of Marvin, but I'm quite fond of Wayne. In fact, I like having a cute little brother. Of course, most importantly, I actually like this place."

"You and your army are about to enter the land which I worked hard to build up. Do you think I would allow you to trample it?"

Madeline turned silent.

After a long time, a helpless voice came out of the carriage, "In that case, do I have no other choice but to make a move?"

"Retreat or make a move."

Daniela's body began to slowly change, her skin becoming whiter as a great amount of cold air burst out of her body!

Ice Angel Shape!

"Ice Angel? Interesting." Madeline's joking voice suddenly came from behind Daniela!

A Teleportation Door had silently appeared behind the latter without anyone noticing.

Daniela was caught off guard by Madeline's fire whip and heavily crashed on the ground.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 246: Insane

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Madeline was very proud of herself.

She had trained hard for many years and finally reached the Legend Realm! Though, the Legendary specialties and abilities she obtained weren't comparable to what other Legend Wizards obtained.

But in any case, she already become a Legend!

How many Legend Wizards were there in the entire South?

Legend Wizards were even qualified to hold a seat in the South Wizard Alliance's assembly.

In these times, no one could easily provoke a Wizard. And everyone aspired to be a Legend Wizard.

Unlike other Legend classes, being a Legend Wizard meant true supremacy.

After all, this was the era of the Wizards!

When she split up with Marvin, she returned to her own Wizard Tower, dead set on becoming a Legend.

She immediately began to seek a breakthrough using that page of the Book of Nalu.

Sure enough, in less than two weeks, she miraculously advanced.

Even though she had yet to form her Demi-Plane and just started researching her personal Legend spell, she was itching to retaliate!

...

But Marvin died!

Madeline still felt a bit of regret at this news.

That crafty little guy forced herself into an humiliating command contract and died before suffering from her retaliation.

Madeline was rather annoyed.

But she was still pleased that she had enough reasons to take back the resources she was forced to give to Marvin.

She originally was someone full of ambitions and wouldn't be able to be blackmailed by Marvin for long.

Using that page of the Book of Nalu to trade for River Shore City was merely a temporary peace treaty. It was a verbal agreement between both parties with Hathaway as a witness. But the current Madeline wasn't worried about Hathaway!

They were both Legend Wizards, why would she be afraid of her?

Madeline also heard of Marvin's Legend friends crazily retaliating against the Twin Snakes Cult.

This caused her to stay a bit vigilant.

Even though Marvin died, he still had many friends. She couldn't be too fierce when taking White River Valley back.

Thus she used her relationship with the Alliance to make them issue Marvin's death certificate ahead of time, leaving White River Valley without an Overlord.

The South Wizard Alliance stipulated that the official heir had to be at least 13 years old to inherit the land.

When Jean, Marvin's father, died, Marvin was already 13 years old. Thus, it was logical for him to inherit White River Valley's Overlord position.

But Wayne was only 9 years old. He would only be a future heir.

Besides Wayne, there wasn't anyone qualified to inherit White River Valley's Overlord position.

At that time, Madeline worked hard and found a convoluted old rule.

When an Overlord of a neighboring territory was unable to formally inherit his territory, a high level noble was entitled to annex the territory, supervising it on his behalf.

In other words, she could make Wayne her vassal.

As a result, White River Valley and River Shore City would become one and the same.

There were no issues with the Alliance's laws. Those Legends also had nothing to say.

Marvin died after all. They weren't overly emotional and wouldn't help him take care of White River Valley.

In Madeline's eyes, only Hathaway of the Three Ring Towers might interfere.

But as long as she dealt with that matter perfectly, and did everything out in the open, even Hathaway would have nothing to say!

This was Madeline's plan.

...

But what made Madeline angry and annoyed was White River Valley's attitude.

Unyielding and cold.

Whether it was Wayne or those ordinary inhabitants, even though these guys were restless, no one admitted that Lord Marvin died. They were convinced "Magical Marvin" would create another miracle. What's more, they didn't want to be annexed by River Shore City.

And Daniela's appearance was something Madeline hadn't expected.

This young lady was the princess of the Lavis Dukedom in the North. Even if she was alone right now, who knew when Knights of the North would come to protect this land? Moreover, there were those Wizards of the White Tower, who were existence that were a match for the South Wizard Alliance.

She had to solve this matter fast.

All this was what she had in mind.



Thus, she wouldn't kill Daniela, but she also wouldn't be lenient. She had to make her powerless as quickly as possible.

As far as Legend Wizards were concerned, this wasn't very difficult.

After all, Daniela might be strong, but she was only a 4th rank powerhouse with her Ice Angel Shape.

4th rank and 5th rank, mortal and Legend. There was an insurmountable gap!

Daniela's ice spells didn't harm Madeline too much because she had a specialty that gave her high elemental resistance!

And Madeline's Demon bloodline gave her all kinds of spells that could let her easily subdue Daniela!

That flaming whip in her hand kept cracking against Daniela, and each time it hit her, it would consume some of the Ice Angel's power.

Soon, the Ice Angel's body became riddled with scars.

She even scraped a part of her face.

Daniela ground her teeth with an unyielding attitude. She was a stubborn person and she would always do what she wanted to do.

She liked this White River Valley, and she had promised Wayne. She wouldn't retreat!

These were her principles.

A frightening ice aura suddenly rose up from her body.

Madeline was startled.

"What are you trying to do?!" She flickered and kept her distance from Daniela.

"Hahaha... Madeline." Daniela slightly tilted her head, blood trickling down from her neck, but she didn't feel it. "You getting White River Valley is simply a dream."

"I would rather destroy it than to let you obtain it!"

Madeline frowned.

Daniela's spell really gathered a large amount of power, truly enough to destroy White River Valley in an instant!

This warm valley would turn into a cold and barren wasteland.

This was an all or nothing strategy!

Daniela coldly watched Madeline.

This was her final trump card.

She bet that Madeline wouldn't dare to make another move.

Because she wouldn't gain anything.

But she couldn't have expected that Madeline would suddenly sneer, "All or nothing?"

"Have you even asked their opinion?"

'They?'

Daniela froze.

She noticed a group of people coming from the main road.

Escorted by the Dark Knights were the Sean the old Blacksmith, Anna, Wayne, Andre and the other guards, Necromancer Fidel, and even that nameless Alchemist!

They stood together in front of the army of River Shore City, standing behind Daniela.

"We naturally agree."

Wayne coldly looked at Madeline with clenched fists. "I already evacuated White River Valley's inhabitants."

"If you think of using military power to seize our land, we won't yield."

Madeline's face ashened.

She hadn't thought that this group would be so troublesome!

She obviously came to "protect" this territory, and her actions could be considered relatively gentle, but they actually didn't know what was good for them!

White River Valley had lost Marvin; even if she didn't take over, wouldn't they be annexed by other Overlords sooner or later?!

Gloominess flashed through Madeline's eyes.

Suddenly, everyone was a bit shocked to see a rune appearing in her eyes.

"Sure enough... Was I too gentle?"

"What made you think that a Legend Wizard was so easy to send away?"

"I originally wanted to treat you well on account of my friendship with Lord Marvin, and take care of White River Valley's inhabitants."

"But you have managed to make me angry!"

A huge amount of shadows gathered behind her back. It was a frightening power!

Wayne clenched his teeth. He held Anna's hand tightly.

Daniela took a deep breath, the spell in her hand about to explode at any time!

At that moment, the old blacksmith took a step forward and loudly said, "Lady Madeline! Are you fearless enough to follow in the Twin Snakes Cult's footsteps?"

Madeline's hair was suddenly blown away by wind. She seemed deranged as she faced the sky while madly laughing. "Silly blacksmith. You actually dare to compare me with the Twin Snakes Cult?"

"Who would fight against a Legend Wizard for the sake of a dead man?"

"I didn't kill Marvin. Everything I did was according with the Alliance's rules!"

"You really don't know what's good for you. Since you are determined to go against me, I'll let you experience the fury of a Legend Wizard!"

...

'Insane.'

When that strange rune appeared in Madeline's eyes, Marvin, who was disguised as one of the guards, clearly understood what had happened.

Madeline was only trying to find an excuse.

Even if he appeared, she wouldn't give up. She might kill him and everyone!

Because she was already insane!

The Book of Nalu.

It was an artifact that could drive people insane. Madeline didn't advance to Legend in the past because she didn't have the aptitude!

This time, Hathaway kindly gave her the 6th page of the Book of Nalu and not the 3rd page.

This let her successfully advance to Legend. But the Book of Nalu still managed to cast a shadow in her heart.

She had already lost her sanity.

That rune was clear proof.

The power of the Book of Nalu was constantly corroding her reason.

'This woman was full of ambitions and desires, but her willpower wasn't strong enough.'

'Even if she advanced to Legend, the signs of the Book of Nalu's control are fairly obvious.'

'Since that's the case, there is no need for leniency.'

After thinking of this, killing intent flashed through Marvin's eyes.

Legend Wizard?

It wasn't as if he had never killed one!

Most 4th ranks and Legends had Fatal Injuries Immunity.

But the Wizard class didn't!

Marvin had once successfully assassinated a Legend Wizard when he was still at the 4th rank in the game.

In this world, Marvin couldn't afford to mess up.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 247: The Monarch's Return!

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

A frightening cloud was gathering.

Marvin solemnly looked at the sky.

'Damn, another Burning Firerain... Why do these Legend Wizards lack creativity?'

'Why do they all have to choose Burning Firerain from among all those large-scale Legend spells?'

Apart from Hathaway's Ashes Storm, all the Legend Wizards Marvin had met so far simply used Burning Firerain!

Daniela raised her hands, and a dense icy mist burst out of her body.

This was the power of the Ice Angel.

The berserk icy mist rushed up to scatter the black cloud.

But this time, Madeline seemed determined to fight it out against Daniela.

When Daniela countered that Legend Ogre Mage's Burning Firerain, she succeeded because the other side had cast it quickly, controlled it from a long distance, and spent a lot effort to maintain the spell.

This let her gain the advantage.

But it wasn't the same for Madeline.

Her magic power fiercely surged out as the black cloud mixed with flames and cut into the icy mist as if it were insignificant.

Soon, the ice began to melt and turn into a warm drizzle, slowly falling on everyone's face.

But no one withdrew.

Daniela's face was pale as she mustered her strength!

But it had very little effect. The black cloud was still slowly gathering.

Madeline's face grew even more sinister. "Want to fight with a Legend Wizard? Wait till your bloodline has thoroughly awakened!"

"The current you is no different from an ant in my eyes!"

Still hidden in the crowd, Marvin drew a deep breath and was about to act...

When suddenly, he noticed footsteps gradually approaching from behind them.

It was a group of people moving quietly.

Wayne's group all turned around in shock, only to see familiar silhouettes appearing one after the other on the main road.

These were White River Valley's inhabitants.

They should have already evacuated at Wayne's command! Just like when White River Valley was in danger before, they should have gone to Green Village or other places to temporarily take refuge.

But this time, they didn't leave.

They came over.

"Aunt Shili... You..."

"Little Rota..."

"Run away!" Anna's expression suddenly turned to worry as she loudly yelled.

The usually well-behaved inhabitants didn't listen to Anna's command.

They silently stood behind Wayne and the others.

There were approximately seven to eight hundred of them.

"We already sent the young and the elderly to Green Village."

A very plain looking middle-aged man said, "Every time White River Valley met with trouble, we hid and let Lord Marvin and Miss Anna protect us. Countless times, we said nothing and just went."

"After hearing that this time, River Shore City wants to forcefully annex White River Valley, we came to take a look."

"We also don't know what to do, but we believe that Lord Marvin didn't die. He will return."

They all nodded.

These were White River Valley's ordinary inhabitants. They silently farmed and carried out Marvin's commands.

They believed that Lord Marvin would lead them to a peaceful future.

They also loved White River Valley.

This was their hometown.

...

More and more people kept appearing from the main road.

They calmly looked at Madeline, and calmly looked at River Shore City's army. They all consciously stayed silent.

But every person that appeared would increase Madeline's fury!

These mere ants actually dared to join forces and go against her!

She was a Legend Wizard!

These insignificant humans were actually unwilling to accept her protection and actually believed in that Marvin who was already dead!

Why!?

"No one can stop me from getting what I want."

"Since you have so much faith in Marvin, so much faith in a dead person, then you can go keep him company!"

"Die!"

Madeline violently roared, "Knights! Listen to my command!"

"Kill them all!"

She pointed at those unarmed and defenseless civilians.

Those strange runes in her eyes were becoming brighter.

The Book of Nalu already completely deceived her mind!

She had already lost control.

But what happened next enraged her even further...

River Shore City's army didn't move!

All the Knights were silent.

Some of the guards had fought alongside White River Valley about half a month ago.

They just looked at those civilians, and no one urged their horse forward.

"What are you doing!?" Madeline's hair crazily danced about as she bellowed.

The Head Knight bowed with a heavy face. "Madam City Lord, they are defenseless civilians."

"I don't care." Madeline coldly watched him. "I told you to kill them!"

"Swish!"

The Head Knight let go of his sword and bowed. "Forgive me for being unable to comply."

The spirit of a Knight made him unable to make a move on defenseless civilians!

Even if he once swore an oath of eternal loyalty to Madeline, the Head Knight couldn't do something that completely went against his principles.

"Swish! Swish! Clang!"

All the Knights silently let go of their swords.

They said in low voices, "Forgive me for being unable to comply."

On the Silver Church's side, Collins frowned. "There is something wrong with the City Lord... Issuing such a foolish command is a bit weird."

The actions of River Shore City's Knights completely sent Madeline into an abyss of madness!

"You dare betray me!"

"Good! If you don't make a move, I'll clear out all this trash myself!"

Madeline's body soared and in an instant, that black cloud expanded over everyone!

Including River Shore City and White River Valley's armies!

Their expressions changed. Even Collins was startled and hurriedly had the Silver Church's forces retreat!

The previous agreement with Madeline wasn't like this. Everything should have been handled according to the Alliance's rules without harming the population.



Who could have thought that the current Madeline seemed to have completely changed?

Where did that shrewd City Lord go?

Collins instinctively felt something fishy!

...

The black cloud on the sky had condensed.

Daniela's icy mist was soon completely eradicated by the black cloud!

She let out a groan and then spat out blood, before falling limp on the ground!

The Ice Angel Shape began to gradually return to her original human shape.

This meant that she already used up all her strength and received a very serious injury!

Anna and Wayne promptly went to her side and supported her up.

But a hint of sorrow flashed through everyone's eyes.

Now, no one could block Madeline.

All of Marvin's Legend friends were in the North and fighting the Twin Snakes Cult. It was rumored that they were even preparing to challenge that Azure Matriarch sealed in ice!

Wayne bit his lips and muttered in a low voice, "I contacted Hathaway before this happened. But she has yet to answer."

Anna forced a smile and shook her head, and looking at the gradually condensing firerain in the sky, she urged everyone to run!

But no one moved.

They silently stood there, using their own lives to convey their complaint to Madeline.

They were insignificant mortals, greedy for life and afraid of death, mere bystanders on the grand scheme of things.

But some things would give people the courage to disregard their own lives.

Some beliefs were worth using their own lives to defend.

White River Valley wouldn't become part of River Shore City. This was their home, and was Lord Marvin's territory, not Madeline's.

This was their belief.

...

Flames were already burning in the black cloud, and in at most ten seconds, the frightening Burning Firerain would begin to fall down.

In fact, if not for Daniela's efforts, it already would have happened.

Daniela bitterly smiled, "I didn't think I would die at this insane woman's hands."

"No, You won't." A heavy voice could be heard at her side.

Daniela looked at that Dark Knight with shock. She faintly remembered that his name was Zero.

"Yes, we won't." Another Dark Knight lifted his head.

The Dark Knights couldn't help but inexorably mumble:

"He is back."

"The Monarch has returned."

They all looked at those Dark Knights with shock!

They had never said a word since Marvin's death, but they still carried out the orders given by Marvin before then.

The old blacksmith had tried to ask about Marvin's whereabouts through them, but they seemed to be at loss.

This made him feel very helpless.

That candle representing Marvin's life had disappeared when Marvin completed the [Path of Darkness].

From historical records, Sean guessed that the candle had shifted to some hidden place in the Eternal Night Kingdom, just like the Night Monarch's.

But now.

All the Dark Knights repeated that sentence:

"The Monarch has returned."

No one understood what they meant.

Then, under Madeline's insane laughter, the Burning Firerain began to crazily down!

Pitiful civilians hugged each other, tightly closing their eyes.

And the Dark Knights were looking at the sky with expectation.

The burning rain of fire mercilessly approached!

But at that time, something happened.

A faint dark screen rose up from the crowd, and in a blink, it formed an oval-shaped barrier above them.

The Burning Firerain fell onto the dark screen and was stopped outside!

Everyone blankly raised their heads and saw the stars!

The sky had gone dark, as if night suddenly fell. But the everlasting stars were extremely bright.

That black cloud was still in the sky and Burning Firerain was still pouring down, but they weren't harmed in the slightest!

"This... What happened?" Anna looked at this strange and unforeseen event, stunned.

At that time, a familiar voice echoed next to her.

"Sorry, I made everyone worry."

"But it is fine now."

"I have returned."

Under the starlight, and under everyone startled and happy gazes, a guard walked out from the crowd.

Marvin removed Disguise.

A mark faintly appeared on his forehead.

The Eternal Night Imprint.

And in the dark screen above them, a pair of eyes flashed.

All the Dark Knights knelt down.

Their monarch had returned.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 248: Saint's Strength

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"Brother!"

Wayne looked at Marvin with disbelief and rushed over, excited. He tightly hugged Marvin.

Marvin smiled.

Daniela, Anna, Fidel, the Alchemist...

Everyone was looking at Marvin, startled and surprised.

He had returned!

Everyone's pillar!

Marvin softly patted Wayne's head. "Let me have a chat with the crazy woman above us, okay?"

Wayne very cleverly got out of the way.

Then, before everyone's eyes, Marvin opened his arms and loudly chanted something.

The oval defensive barrier spread in an instant to over five kilometers, with night filling that entire area!

The stars were bright and the night wind was cold.

That black cloud over their heads was broken by that majestic power, leaving no trace behind!

This was the Night Monarch's power!

This was the power of a Saint.

...

Marvin was about to act and deal with Madeline just before the Burning Firerain was cast.

He was now at the 4th rank, so his original plan was to assassinate Madeline, which wouldn't have posed too much trouble.

But at that time, something unexpected happened!

His Eternal Night Imprint activated.

Some power poured into him from the Eternal Night Kingdom.

Marvin could feel that a powerful consciousness was slowly recovering inside the Eternal Night Kingdom.

Perhaps it was the resolve of White River Valley's civilians using their lives to defend their territory, or it may have been another thing, but it apparently stirred something in the Eternal Night Imprint.

The spirit of the Night Monarch awakened.

It was as if Marvin had held an advanced ritual, and a part of the Night Monarch condensed in the Eternal Night Imprint.

There wasn't much communication between them, but Marvin instantly understood the Night Monarch's intentions.

Marvin was his heir.

His power was Marvin's power.

Thus, under the guidance of the Night Monarch, he thoroughly stimulated the remnant power in the Eternal Night Imprint.

Marvin shortly transformed into a Legend powerhouse!

He looked at his stats and saw his Strength jump from 15 points to 30 points, and his Constitution rose from 13 to 28. Marvin felt that assassinating Madeline wasn't needed anymore!

Even if he could have killed her from the shadows without this power, now he could completely deal with her out in the open.

His six attributes went through a world-shaking change, approaching the godly domain of 30!

At the same time, his Night Walker skills obtained a tremendous growth rate while a few abilities belonging to the Night Monarch appeared. It was enough to let Marvin deal with a newly advanced Legend Wizard.

Leading Feinan's inhabitants just like the Night Monarch in ancient times.

In the night, he was the Monarch!

...

"Marvin! You didn't die!"

Madeline excitedly licked her lips.

She ignored the change in her surroundings.

"Just in time. I'll make you pay for the humiliation I suffered before!"

Evil intent flashed in Madeline's eyes!

Before Marvin could say anything, a Legendary Dissociation already shot out!

Marvin coldly floated in the sky and stayed there, letting the Dissociation hit his body!

"Woosh!"

A dark light forcefully dispersed the Dissociation.

What a joke. After the Night Monarch's power poured into Marvin's body, he became immune to those instant death spells!

He could freely fly and maneuver in the darkness, and not many people could stop him.

"Madeline! You are already being brainwashed by the Book of Nalu!"

He loudly warned, "If you don't wake up, only death awaits you!"

"You are being controlled!"

Madeline crazily laughed. "You know what? You know what I saw? I saw the future!"

"Marvin, ah, Marvin, really interesting, let me see, turns out you aren't from this world..."

Marvin's heart went cold!

What ability did this woman obtain from the Book of Nalu in the end?

But regardless, he wasn't patient enough to let her continue!

He suddenly disappeared!

[Night Boundary].

Under the curtain of darkness, the entire area would bend to Marvin's will and he could directly ignore the fetters of space.

A cold curved dagger ripped the air apart, ruthlessly chopping toward Madeline's head!

Her words were forcefully interrupted.

His Strength which reached the godly 30 directly broke through Madeline's defensive barrier!

She was startled and hurriedly entered a Teleportation Door.

But then, Marvin appeared once more behind her!

His cold dagger ruthlessly chased her and stopped on her neck.

Shadow Escape!

In the night, and filled with the Night Monarch's power, Marvin was simply unequalled.

Leymann at his peak might not necessarily be Marvin's match, let alone a new Legend like Madeline.

A cold left hand pressed against her neck.

She then felt her own magic power quickly disappearing!

"Nooooo!"

Madeline painfully yelled, "You can't do that!"

[Chaos Magic Seal]!

One of the skills of the Night Monarch.

This was a spell the Night Monarch used to seal the abilities of the monsters born from chaos.

But it was also suitable for use against Wizards, especially Legend Wizards.

In a few seconds, the power in Madeline's body was completely sealed away!

She had already turned into a mortal.

Losing her power like that undoubtedly made her lose what little was left of her mind.

She ignored Marvin's curved dagger and crazily grabbed her own hair!

"Please, give me back my power!"

"Please, don't kill me!"

She kept howling in grief.

The onlookers couldn't help but hold their breaths when seeing this scene.

Wasn't the change in the situation too big?!

Lord Marvin appeared and casually subdued Madeline who recently advanced to Legend?

All the Knights of River Shore City were stunned!

And Collins turned tail and ran the moment Marvin appeared. The Silver Church's Paladins followed him and slipped away.

White River Valley's group was cheering excitedly!

...

In the sky, Marvin had successfully sealed Madeline's magic power.

Facing the latter's continuous begging, Marvin hesitated.

In the end, he made a decision.

People who tried to infringe on White River Valley couldn't keep their lives.

Let alone Madeline who had been brainwashed by the Book of Nalu. She was no longer that City Lord of River Shore City.



She had to die.

Thus, the curved dagger ruthlessly slashed down!

Everyone silently watched Madeline's head falling from the sky.

River Shore City's Knights didn't know how to react.

"Woosh!"

The dark shadow descended from the sky. Marvin appeared in front of the Head Knight.

"Madeline already lost her mind. As you just saw, she tried to violate the Alliance's rules, using force to assault my White River Valley. I only defended my territory and people."

"If you have any complaints, you can come look for me. But Masters, I advise you to return to River Shore City first and wait for the Alliance's arrangements."

The Knights looked at each other in dismay. They didn't know why, but Marvin had a kind of charisma that made it hard for them to disobey!

His words made others feel as if they had no choice but to comply.

River Shore City's main forces silently retreated.

No one paid attention to Madeline's corpse sprawled in the wilderness.

Then, the curtain of darkness abruptly disappeared!

Everything returned to normal as the sky regain the color of an evening sky.

They all looked at Marvin slowly coming back from River Shore City's side. Everything that happened today felt like an illusion.

...

White River Valley's villagers who had been evacuated learnt of their Overlord's return.

Thus, the notice of evacuation turned into a celebration notice!

People spread the news that Lord Marvin returned unscathed, and the news of him repelling River Shore City's invasion by himself.

In the castle, despite Marvin explaining everything, he was still asked many questions.

For some details, Marvin could only fabricate a story as usual.

Unfortunately, those parts could easily trick Wayne, Anna, and the others, but they couldn't trick Daniela.

The latter was looking at Marvin, panting with rage.

"You had already returned earlier. Why did you hide and not come out?"

"Your fiancée was beaten by that loathsome Half-Demon until she spat blood and you actually did not come out! Are you a man, Marvin?!"

Marvin could only bitterly smile and scratch his head.

Marvin had just hurried over when Madeline and Daniela fought. He was about to act when the Burning Firerain was forming, but the Eternal Night Imprint activated.

In the process, he wasn't calmly waiting.

Facing Daniela's reproach, Marvin could only bitterly laugh and sincerely apologize.

In any case, Daniela went all-out for White River Valley. If not for her, White River Valley might have already collapsed before his return.

...

On the castle balcony, Anna couldn't help but cry out.

When Marvin disappeared, she was truly frightened all day long. She repeatedly told herself that Marvin was fine, but ice cold proof left her at a loss.

Now that Marvin came back, she lost control and was unable to hold back.

"Can you promise me that you won't do something like that anymore?"

Marvin was silent when confronted with Anna's request.

He knew he had been in great danger and frightened many people who cared about him.

But could he really not take any risks in the future?

Probably not.

"Anna, I can only promise you that I'll try to take to take less risks..."

"I still have a strong grasp on what I plan to d..."

He had yet to finish his sentence when a meteor suddenly flashed in the sky!

Marvin's eyes twitched!

The meteor was actually flying over.

"Careful..."

He pushed Anna away.

The meteor crashed against the balcony railing, and knocked into Marvin!

Marvin felt a sharp pain in his chest as he was sent flying from the balcony.

Soon, his body fell on the ground as a huge force grabbed him and forcefully dragged him up!

In an instant, Marvin felt the sky spinning and was dazed.

A familiar face appeared before Marvin.

Hathaway.

"Hel..."

Marvin barely managed to focus and intended to greet her.

"Slap!"

A ruthless slap fell.

Marvin froze.

Then, a warm feeling could be felt on his lips.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

## **Read Night Ranger - Chapter 249: Avengers Alliance?**

Chapter 249: Avengers Alliance?

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

Marvin's silhouette could be seen falling down from the World Tree.

It was followed by Bamboo's beautiful face and the Nine Headed earth-shattering silhouette.

After Marvin watched, he could only bitterly laugh and shake his head.

He finally understood why everyone thought he was dead!

He hadn't expected that destroying the Decaying Plateau would cause such a huge upheaval.

He knew his fame rapidly soared and he that he would definitely be considered a hero, but he hadn't expected that it would happen like this.

He had thought that the Fame was rewarded by the system. He hadn't expected it to come from a live broadcast throughout Feinan!

This was something completely unforeseen.

That kind of special event seemed to have something to do with the plane's laws, and Marvin, as a player, wasn't too well versed in this field.

Thus, he made a mistake. He had thought that what happened in the World Tree wouldn't be seen by outsiders.

Something like that happened because he couldn't send a message on time.

Everyone thought Marvin already died, and took revenge on behalf of Marvin out of grief and rage while he was still leisurely strolling around the World Tree.

He wasn't too worried when he returned to Feinan, and made his way back to White River Valley.

In fact, if it wasn't for Madeline noisily making a move, he wouldn't have learnt on the way that people already considered him dead.

This originated from an uncanny misunderstanding.

...

"I'm so sorry, I made you worry. I had no way to communicate inside the World Tree's domain." Marvin coughed twice and apologized in a low voice.

Right now, he and Hathaway weren't in White River Valley, but actually in the Ashes Tower.

After that warm kiss that caught Marvin unprepared, Hathaway coldly and forcefully carried him away, only notifying Wayne.

Everyone knew Marvin was brought away by Hathaway and thus was at ease. Lady Hathaway was one of those Legend powerhouses that were friends with Marvin.

Marvin safely returned, so naturally he would have to chat with them.

Hathaway brought him back to Ashes Tower and then made him look at the scene through the crystal ball.

Marvin took another deep breath. "I am really sorry..."

"I am not angry. I just lost control of my emotions for a bit." Hathaway had regained her calm demeanor.

She was in her appearance as a 16 year old young lady, and was a bit shorter than Marvin.

"Listen, Marvin."

"You can't do something like that again. This matter was too crazy. It was something that completely exceeded your abilities. This was something even gods couldn't do!"

"You might be a special Seer, able to see farther than me, but something like the future is ever changing!"

Hathaway gave Marvin a serious look. "You fell in the abyss... That was the future I saw."

"Fortunately, you came back alive. This was another potential future. But what if the future I saw really happened?"

"By all means! Don't try something out of your means again!"

Marvin nodded.

That matter really was a bit crazy. Not only was it reckless and dangerous, but he also dragged many Legends into that danger.

From Hathaway's words, if it wasn't for the Great Elven King ultimately making a move, they might have not been able to escape the Decaying Plateau!

Destroying a plane wasn't something he should have tried at the moment.

Everything had gone well after transmigrating, largely increasing Marvin's confidence. But in reality, he had been dancing on the edge of a blade many times.

A moment of carelessness and he would have lost his life!

This wasn't the game where he could revive after dying.

This was a real world.

"Yes, I promise."

"Something like this won't happen in the future," he seriously said.

Hathaway gently nodded. She grabbed Marvin and led him to the roof of the Ashes Tower.

"Where are we going?"

Soon, Marvin reached the roof of the Ashes Tower and discovered a long-distance Teleportation Gate.

"The North," answered Hathaway simply.

Then, a burst of arcane magic completely enveloped Marvin!

...

A cold northern wind that felt as sharp as a blade fiercely scraped Marvin's face.

When he opened his eyes, a boundless field of snow spread in front of him.

A male Wizard was looking strangely at him.

He was a 4th rank Wizard wearing a pure white gown, a Wizard from the North's Wizard organization, the Wizards' White Tower.

"Lady Hathaway, you came," the White Tower's Wizard politely said, "I already made preparations for you..."

"No need," she declined coldly.

Then, she gently grabbed Marvin's hand.

The Wizard's face reddened.

The magic carpet rose up and the two sped like a meteor, disappearing in the snow!

They kept going north.

Marvin was barely able to see the destination.

The magic carpet was flying extremely fast and Hathaway was ignoring the price to speed it up. They used over 20000 Wizard golds of magic powder!

Marvin was dumbfounded. This was truly flushing money down the toilet!

But before he could regain his focus, a world-shaking sound could be heard in front of them!

Hathaway suddenly slowed down!

Before them was a glacier from ancient times.

A black line could be seen on the snow south of the glacier. A few small shadows were standing on the southern side of the line.

From time to time, thunderous sounds echoed from the glacier.

Marvin squinted and was shocked to discover a familiar silhouette!

O'Brien!

He ripped through the glacier and was fighting with an azure shadow inside!

"Wait... This place is..."

Marvin held his breath. "Don't tell me this is the place where the Azure Matriarch was slumbering?"

Hathaway nodded, a killing intent flashing through her eyes. "Indeed it is."

"After that Azure Matriarch's Chosen assassinated you, or at least tried to, we made a move. Do you want take a look at that Bamboo woman?"

Marvin was shocked, "You captured Bamboo?"

Hathaway silently took out a small bundle and handed it over to Marvin.

Marvin silently opened it.

It was Bamboo's head.

She died with her eyes wide open, as if full of grievances.

"Rest assured, she thoroughly died," Hathaway conscientiously explained.

"I found the place where she revived, and killed her a third time," she said, all with a calm voice.

But Marvin could see the torment Bamboo had suffered before her death from the expression on that face!

He suddenly felt that Hathaway's cold expression was very warm!

"Thank you... Thank you..." Marvin said.

He then looked at those silhouettes on the snow!

Shadow Thief Owl, White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant, Constantine, Endless Ocean, along with a strange old man, and a Legend Barbarian.

Hathaway rushed the magic carpet and the two of them quickly descended.

"You returned so fast? It's not your shift yet..."

Owl casually turned around.

That guy's expression suddenly changed.

"Fuck!"

"You bastard!"

Marvin instantly covered his head with his hands!

All the Legends immediately surrounded him, staring at Marvin who died and come back to life. As Marvin expected, those guys started beating him one after the other!

These guys were Legends!

Their moves weren't light!

The White Deer Holy Spirit Lorant didn't attack him though. That guy was constantly using healing magic to heal Marvin!

On the surface he was helping Marvin.

But Owl and Constantine became even more ruthless thanks to it!

If he was healed, then there was no need to worry that the kid would die!



...

A full ten minutes later, Hathaway saved Marvin from Owl and Constantine's relentless attacks.

Lorant burst out laughing and cast a few more Legend level heals on Marvin. The latter completely recovered.

But the pain from that beating couldn't be cured.

"I knew you wouldn't die so easily kid!" Constantine heartily laughed. "I used quite a few Dawn Light to massacre cities before, so all of them are on your tab!"

Shadow Thief Owl chuckled, "Half of those purple gowned guys from the Twin Snakes Cult died by my hands. Making a Legend Shadow Thief make a move has a cost. You go calculate it."

Marvin gave a hollow laugh. The way these two guys teased him was rather particular, but he still felt warm.

This was the feeling of friendship.

Everyone felt sincerely happy at Marvin's "resurrection". As for the Twin Snakes Cult, no one would mourn them.

"Let's move on," Hathaway said while waving her hand, "We should stop what's happening inside."

They all nodded.

Marvin looked at the black line in front of him. This was clearly a boundary.

He couldn't help but ask, "How did he get in?"

Constantine shook his head. "Who knows. We can't get in, only O'Brien could."

"This is the slumbering place of the Azure Matriarch. She has the support of a steady flow of power coming from the World Ending Twin Snakes. We fear O'Brien might not be able to keep going, so we're taking shifts to check the situation."

"If it doesn't go well, we can all give it a try at the same, to see whether or not we can fight our way inside."

Hathaway looked at Marvin. "This was why I rushed you over."

Marvin suddenly understood.

Time Molt.

This thing was still in his hands.

This was the world's best artifact that could pass through all boundaries. It could even pass through the Universe Magic Pool. So what if it was the World Ending Twin Snakes?

Marvin immediately put Time Molt on his shoulder and went inside the glacier.

Only to see the Nine Headed Azure Matriarch being beaten down by O'Brien!

'Damn...'

'Four of the nine heads have exploded...'

Marvin looked at O'Brien tyrannically stepping on one of the heads and weakly shouted, "Leader, I'm fine..."

Hearing this voice, O'Brien suddenly turned around.

Happiness appeared on his face as he quickly kicked down on the fifth head!

"Bang!"

The fifth head exploded!

If not for the steady flow of power from the World Ending Twin Snakes, the Azure Matriarch would have already been killed by O'Brien!

"Let's leave!" O'Brien greeted Marvin and the latter once again used Time Molt as they left the glacier.

"Uhhh..."

The Night Walker Leader panted as he reproachfully looked at Marvin. "Boy, you sure aren't nice. You playing dead has made me use too much power, I almost exhausted all my strength..."

Everyone sweated.

This guy had displayed the vitality of a dragon and the fierceness of a tiger while in that glacier, how could he be exhausted?

Marvin could only bitterly smile. "I'm sorry. It was my fault."

"No, I don't blame you."

At that time, the strange old man carrying a jar of wine suddenly walked over, looked at Marvin, and clicked his tongue. "If not for you, I might have never seen so many Legends working together with a common purpose during my life."

"I heard that they formed a temporary alliance to avenge you."

"What was the name...?"

Marvin couldn't help but blurt out, "It wouldn't be the Avengers Alliance, right?"

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.

Chapter 250: Rebirth

Translator: Translation Nation Editor: Translation Nation

"Avengers Alliance? Why would you think of such a strange name?" Hathaway asked, baffled.

"We had yet to name the Alliance... But that sounds alright."

Marvin gave a hollow laugh. "We can still think of the name, I only said that casually."

If these Legends gathered together, they would really be a huge power. During the game, there was the lack of a force of Legends gathering together. They all fought their respective battles and were ultimately annihilated by the gods.

And Marvin, as a player, knew the advantages of fighting as a group.

Regardless if it was the Shadow Prince, the Crimson Patriarch, or Diggles and his Decaying Plateau that they just took care of, all of them were the results of powerhouses fighting together.

This was why he tried to win over all kinds of Legends that he met ever since he transmigrated.

If they truly formed an Alliance, even if the Great Calamity happened, Feinan's situation would be substantially different.

"I'm not feeling too good, I need a place to rest."

O'Brien was indeed a bit pale. His gaze landed on that well-behaved Legend Barbarian as he asked "Hey, does your place have some alcohol?"

After these words, all the Legends focused on the Barbarian.

The Barbarian was startled, but after a long time, he replied, "There... There is."

...

A hot flame was burning in the fireplace in a spacious wooden house.

Snowflakes flew outside the window, but the room temperature was quite pleasant.

The Legend Barbarian lived in this snowy area all his life but he had never seen so many Legends. This guy treated his guests very sincerely, bringing out all the good wines from his cellar.

O'Brien, Constantine and the others didn't act polite and directly started drinking.

The group of lively people got together, and Marvin once again carefully recounted his experiences.

But regarding his return, he changed his story a bit, only saying that he was lucky and found the Celestial Stairway.

No one looked further into it. They all had their own secrets, and they were friends with Marvin and naturally could see his potential.

In such a short time, Marvin's strength had increased once again, directly reaching 4th rank. This was simply something outrageous.

From Constantine, Owl, and the others, Marvin learned what had happened after he entered the World Tree Domain.

The Great Elven King really came to save them.

But what shocked Marvin was that the Great Elven King apparently got injured during the rescue. Owl and the others didn't know what happened exactly, but they knew how severe the Great Elven King's injury was from the fact that Ivan headed west alone to look for a medicine that could cure injuries from Divine Power.

This was a possibility that Marvin had completely overlooked.

'Seems like I'm still not thinking things through enough.'

After they finished speaking, Marvin inwardly shook his head.

The Great Elven King's injuries were a very frightening matter. Before, he was in perfect condition to welcome the Calamity, which gave Feinan stronger protection.

But now because of Marvin's plan, even though they destroyed the Decaying Plateau, one of the strongest powerhouses in Feinan had suffered a serious injury. Marvin wasn't sure if it was worth it.

Furthermore, Inheim was on the brink of death because of the combined sneak attack of the Shadow Prince and the Plague God. Right now, Sky Fury was accompanying him as he was healed by Mother of Creation.

This was also something Marvin hadn't anticipated.

He originally thought the Legend Monk was the safest one. After all, his Perception was extremely high and his body was tyrannically strong.

Marvin wouldn't have thought that the one that got injured would be him!

But then again, if it was another Legend suffering from the combined sneak attack of these two gods, it would have probably ended in death!

The plan ended up with no deaths, which could be considered as fortunate.

The bottles of alcohol were quickly consumed as they chatted idly.

Marvin didn't drink much, but in the previous battle with Madeline, the overwhelming Night Monarch's remnant power had poured into his body, using a lot of his energy. Then it was followed by the reunion in the snow, where he was beat up by his old friends. His tense body soon fell asleep.

...

At midnight, he opened his eyes. He was a bit dazed, but slowly became more clear-headed.

The flames in the fireplace were still keeping the place warm.

A few men were lying around.

O'Brien... This guy claimed he could still stay sober after a thousand cups, but in reality, he collapsed after drinking some.

Shadow Thief Owl and Constantine were lying down together. It seemed like they were evenly matched.

And that strange old man and the Legend Barbarian were lying down on another side.

Endless Ocean and Hathaway didn't drink a lot. It seemed they each found a room to sleep in.

There were actually quite a few rooms in the Legend Barbarian's wooden house.

At that time he clearly felt a peculiar sensation.

He opened the door, puzzled. And a wave of cold rushed over, even making him sneeze a few times!

Snowy wind blew outside the door as Marvin struggled to walk a few steps.

The cold helped wake him up a bit.

"Your cold resistance isn't too high yet, you shouldn't come out like this."

A gentle voice echoed behind his back.

Marvin smiled and turned around.

Hathaway.

She was standing on the roof of the Barbarian's house, apparently waiting for something.

Marvin leapt up and nimbly landed on the roof.

Around Hathaway was a cold protection boundary. He leaned closer and naturally didn't feel the cold anymore.

"Do you feel it too?" Hathaway looked toward Marvin.

The latter faintly nodded.

There was a strange and mysterious feeling, as if something important was about to happen.

At that moment, bright radiance burst in the sky!

There were meteors!

"Meteors?" Hathaway squinted, looking at the distant sky as light streaked across the night.

"How many?" Even if Marvin had the Night Monarch's blessings, his eyesight was still limited, and he didn't have a Legend scouting spell, so he didn't know how many meteors there were.

"A total of seven," Hathaway quickly answered. "They all landed in the west."

Marvin was silent for a moment. "West, Rocky Mountain."

Hathaway looked at Marvin in surprise. "How did you know?"

She was using a scouting spell to calculate where those meteors landed, but how did Marvin know?

Marvin didn't open his mouth, shaking his head instead.

It seemed the trip to Rocky Mountain had already become urgent!

He was delayed because of the White Deer matter, but now he had to quickly go!

Because if he wasn't wrong, those seven meteors each represented a Source of Fire's Order!

Three of them fell in the hands of the three Fate Sisters.

The eventual whereabouts of the other four were unknown.

A Source of Fire's Order was the best way set up and maintain a country when the chaotic mana flooded Feinan!

If White River Valley wanted to survive this Calamity, he had to get one!

...

West, Rocky Mountain, Chaos Ground.

"Sis, look! Meteors!"

A young purple-haired girl pointed at the meteors in the sky that turned into blazing balls of fire as they plunged towards the uninhabited western area of the Rocky Mountain.

"Boooooom!"

A violent earthquake shook all of the inhabitants of Rocky Mountain!

"Those aren't common Meteors; each is a Source of Fire's Order."

At that time, a plump lifeform came out. It sat on Kate's shoulder and solemnly said, "Those are very important things..."

"Ah... Since it's that important, Ding, help me fight over it," the young girl said.

Ding's expression grew more serious. "But I don't have any fighting strength!"

"Then what should we do? Big Sis went to grab that Black Dragon and told us not to leave this place." The young girl frowned.

Kate patted her younger sister's head. "It's fine, Lorie, I'll go."

"But Big Sis said that before we advance to Legend, we can't leave the Chaos Ground." Lorie tightly pulled on Kate's hand. "I heard there are many bad people outside."

Kate smiled. "You stay here with Ding. My strength is already quite good, I believe I'll advance to Legend sooner or later."

"I'll personally get those Sources of Fire's Order."

...

On the edge of the Chaos Ground, a Black Dragon was craftily running away!

A delicate silhouette was chasing her, unwilling to let go.

Frightening spells were continuously sent over one after the other.

Despite the Black Dragon having a high resistance to Magic, she was covered in cuts and bruises by these frightening spells!

It showed that the Fate Sorcerers' spells were very powerful.

The chase kept going for a while as the Black Dragon was trying her best to escape. In the end, she relied on her own craftiness, and her understanding of Rocky Mountain's topography to successfully flee!

The Fate Sorcerer was very dissatisfied as she stood on a peak!

She had let her escape!

This damn Dragon! She kept causing trouble in the periphery of Chaos Ground, destroying the order personally established by the Fate Sisters.

"Seems like I need to post a notice to look for an expert Dragon Slayer with a good understanding of Dragons," she grumbled to herself.

At that time, seven meteors streaked across the sky, quickly flying over her head and landing in the western part of Rocky Mountain!

She could feel a majestic power from them.

'How could it land there...'



'That's a place no one dares to go. It's rumored that countless Ancient God's bodies are buried over there...'

'Forget it, catching that Black Dragon is more important!'

She thought for a moment, and finally gave up on checking out the meteors.

...

North, the Barbarian's wooden house, in a quiet room.

After closing the door, Marvin slowly took out a scroll page.

On the scroll was a blank space, and it looked like there was nothing there.

He slowly took out a golden quill, used his dagger to cut his thumb, and dipped the quill in blood.

He drew a strange rune on the scroll.

Then, some inexplicable connection was established between him and the scroll.

Words appeared on the scroll. Marvin didn't understand what exactly it meant.

He only knew that the chapter name was [Rebirth].

"Come out. My servant." Marvin softly called out.

Soon, an elegant silhouette appeared on that page of the Book of Nalu.

Under the effect of a mysterious power, that person unexpectedly jumped out of the page and condensed into shape!

"How may I serve you, My lord."

Madeline gently smiled.

The previous evil appearance seemed to have already disappeared, as if she had undergone rebirth.

If you find any errors ( broken links, non-standard content, etc.. ), Please let us know < report chapter > so we can fix it as soon as possible.